

THE
WORKS
OF
J. J. ROUSSEAU.

Translated from the FRENCH.

IN TEN VOLUMES.

VOLUME the THIRD.

EDINBURGH:
Printed for J. BELL, J. DICKSON,
and C. ELLIOT.

M.DCCLXXIII.

WORKS

OF

ROBERT



VOLUME THE THIRD

EDINBURGH

Printed by J. Ballantyne, Edinburgh

and Glasgow

1841



J U L I A :

O R,

The NEW ELOISA.



V O L. III.



J U L I A:

OR,

The N E W E L O I S A.

A SERIES OF
ORIGINAL LETTERS,

Collected and published

By J. J. R O U S S E A U.

Translated from the FRENCH.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

V O L. III.

EDINBURGH:

Printed for J. BELL, J. DICKSON,
and C. ELLIOT.

M.DCC.LXXIII.

JULIA

OR

THE NEW ELOISA

A SERIES OF

ORIGINAL LETTERS

Collected and published



IN THREE VOLUMES

VOL. III

EDINBURGH:

Printed for J. Ball, J. Dickson,

and C. Leitch.

MDCCLXXXIII.

J U L I A;

O R,

The N E W E L O I S A.

L E T T E R CXXX.

To Lord B——.

YES, my Lord, I affirm it; in this family, the useful and agreeable are united throughout: but occupations of use are not confined to those pursuits which yield profit: they comprehend farther every innocent and harmless amusement which may improve a relish for retirement, labour, and temperance, and which may contribute to preserve the mind in a vigorous state, and keep the heart free from the tumults of passion. If inactive indolence begets nothing but melancholy and irksomeness, the delights of an agreeable leisure are the fruits of a laborious life. We only work to enjoy ourselves; the vicissitude of labour and recreation is our natural state. The repose which gives refreshment after past labours, and encouragement to renew them, is not less necessary for man than labour itself.

After

After having admired the good consequences attending the vigilance and care of the prudent Julia in the conduct of her family, I was witness of the good effects of the recreation she uses in a retired place, where she takes her favourite walk, and which she calls her elysium.

I had frequently heard them talk of this elysium, of which they made a mystery before me. Yesterday, however, the excessive heat being almost equally intolerable both within doors and without, Mr Wolmar proposed to his wife to make holiday that afternoon, and instead of going into the nursery towards evening as usual, to come and breathe the fresh air with us in the orchard; she consented, and thither we went.

This place, though just close to the house, is so concealed by a shady walk, that it is not visible from any point. The thick foliage with which it is environed, renders it impervious to the eye, and it is always carefully locked up. I was scarce got within-side, but the door being covered with alder and hawthorn-trees, I could not find out which way I came in, when I turned back; and seeing no door, it seemed as if I had dropped from the clouds.

Upon entering into this disguised orchard, I was seized with an agreeable sensation; the freshness of the thick foliage, the beautiful and lovely verdure, the flowers scattered on each side, the murmuring of the purling stream, and the warbling of a thousand birds, struck my imagination as powerfully as my senses; but at the same time I thought myself in the most wild and solitary place in nature, and I appeared as if I had been the first mortal who had ever penetrated-

netrated into this defart spot. Being seized with astonishment, and transported at so unexpected a sight, I remained motionless for some time, and cried out, in an involuntary fit of enthusiasm, O Tinian! O Juan Fernandez *! Julia, the world's end is at your threshold! Many people, said she, with a smile, think in the same manner; but twenty paces at most presently brings them back to Clarens: let us see whether the charm will work longer upon you. This is the same orchard where you have walked formerly, and where you have played at romps with my cousin. You may remember that the grass was almost burned up, the trees thinly planted, affording very little shade, and that there was no water. You find that now it is fresh, verdant, cultivated, embellished with flowers, and well watered; what do you imagine it may have cost me to put it into the condition you see? For you must know that I am the superintendant, and that my husband leaves the entire management of it to me. In truth, said I, it has cost you nothing but inattention. It is indeed a delightful spot, but wild and rustic; and I can discover no marks of human industry. You have concealed the door; the water springs I know not whence; nature alone has done all the rest, and even you could not have mended her work. It is true, said she, that nature has done every thing, but under my direction, and you see nothing but what has been done under my orders. Guess once more. First, I replied, I cannot con-

* Defart islands in the South-sea, celebrated in Lord Anson's voyage.

conceive how labour and expence can be made to supply the effects of time. The trees . . . As to them, said Mr Wolmar, you may observe that there are none very large, and they were here before. Besides, Julia began this work a long while before her marriage, and presently after her mother's death, when she used to come here with her father in quest of solitude. Well, said I, since you will have these large and massy bowers, these sloping tufts, these umbrageous thickets to be the growth of seven or eight years, and to be partly the work of art, I think you have been a good œconomist if you have done all within this vast circumference for two thousand crowns. You have only guessed two thousand crowns too much, says she, for it cost me nothing. How! nothing? No, nothing; unless you place a dozen days work in the year to my gardener's account, as many to two or three of my people, and some to Mr Wolmar, who has sometimes condescended to officiate, in my service, as a gardener. I could not comprehend this riddle; but Julia, who had hitherto held me, said to me, letting me loose, Go, and you will understand it. Farewell Tinian, farewell Juan Fernandez, farewell all enchantment! In a few minutes you will find your way back from the end of the world.

I began to wander over the orchard thus metamorphosed with a kind of ecstasy; and if I found no exotic plants, nor any of the products of the Indies, I found all those which were natural to the soil, disposed and blended in such a manner as to produce the most chearful and lively effect. The verdant turf, thick, but short
and

and close, was intermixed with wild thyme, balm, sweet marjoram, and other fragrant herbs. You might perceive a thousand wild flowers dazzle your eyes, among which you would be surpris'd to discover some garden-flowers, which seem'd to grow natural with the rest. I now and then met with shady tufts as impervious to the rays of the sun, as if they had been in a thick forest. These tufts were compos'd of trees of a very flexible nature, the branches of which they bend, till they hang on the ground, and take root, as I have seen some trees naturally do in America. In the more open spots, I saw here and there bushes of roses, raspberries, and gooseberries, little plantations of lilack, hattle-trees, alders, seringa, broom, and trefoil, dispers'd without any order or symmetry, and which embellish'd the ground, at the same time that it gave it the appearance of being overgrown with weeds. I followed the track through irregular and serpentine walks, bordered by these flowery thickets, and covered with a thousand garlands compos'd of vines, hopes, rose-weed, snake-weed, and other plants of that kind, with which honey-suckles and jessamine deign'd to interwine. These garlands seem'd as if they were scatter'd carelessly from one tree to another, and form'd a kind of drapery over our heads which shelter'd us from the sun; while under foot we had smooth, agreeable, and dry walking upon a fine moss, without sand or grass or any rugged shoots. Then it was I first discover'd, not without astonishment, that this verdant and bushy umbrage, which had deceiv'd me so much at a distance, was compos'd of these
lux-

luxuriant and creeping plants, which running all along the trees, formed a thick foliage over head, and afforded shade and freshness under foot. I observed likewise, that by means of common industry, they had made several of these plants take root in the trunks of the trees, so that they spread more, being nearer the top. You will readily conceive that the fruit is not the better for these additions ; but this is the only spot where they have sacrificed the useful to the agreeable, and in the rest of their grounds they have taken such care of the trees, that, without the orchard, the return of fruit is greater than it was formerly. If you do but consider how delightful it is to meet with wild fruit in the midst of a wood, and to refresh one's self with it, you will easily conceive what a pleasure it must be to meet with excellent and ripe fruit in this artificial desert, though it grows but here and there, and has not the most tempting appearance ; which however, gives one the pleasure of searching and picking out the best.

All these little walks were bordered and crossed by a clear and limpid rivulet, which one while winded through the grass and flowers in streams scarce perceptible ; at another, rushed in more copious floods upon a clear and speckled gravel, which rendered the water more transparent. You might perceive the springs rise and bubble out of the earth ; and sometimes you might observe deep canals, in which the calm and gentle fluid served as a mirror to reflect the objects around. Now, said I to Julia, I comprehend all the rest : but these waters which I see on every side ? They come from
from

from thence, she replied, pointing to that side where the terrafs lies. It is the same stream which, at a vast expence, supplied the fountain, in the flower-garden, for which nobody cares. Mr Wolmar will not destroy it, out of respect to my father who had it made; but with what pleasure do we come here every day to see this water run through the orchard, which we never look at in the garden! The fountain plays for the entertainment of strangers; this little rivulet flows for our amusement. It is true that I have likewise brought hither the water from the public fountain, which emptied itself into the lake, through the highway, to the detriment of passengers, besides its running to waste without profit to any one. It formed an elbow at the foot of the orchard between two rows of willows; I have taken them within my inclosure, and I bring the same water hither through different channels.

I then perceived that all the contrivance consisted in managing these streams, so as to make them flow in meanders, by separating and uniting them at proper places, by making them run as little upon the slope as possible, in order to lengthen their course, and make the most of a few little murmuring cascades. A lay of earth, covered with some gravel from the lake, and strewed over with shells, forms a bed for these waters. The same streams running at proper distances under some large tiles covered with earth and turf, on a level with the ground, form a kind of artificial springs where they issue forth. Some small streams spout through pipes on some rugged places, and bubble as they fall.

The ground thus refreshed and watered, continually yields fresh flowers, and keeps the grass always verdant and beautiful.

The more I wandered over this delightful asyllum, the more I found the agreeable sensation improve which I experienced at my first entrance: nevertheless, my curiosity kept me in exercise; I was more eager to view the objects around me, than to inquire into the cause of the impressions they made on me, and I chose to resign myself to that delightful contemplation, without taking the trouble of reflection; but Mrs Wolmar drew me out of my reverie, by taking me under the arm: All that you see, said she, is nothing but vegetable and inanimate nature, which, in spite of us, always leaves behind it a melancholy idea of solitude. Come and view nature animated and more affecting. There you will discover some new charm every minute in the day. You anticipate me, said I; I hear a confused chirping noise, and I see but few birds; I suppose you have an aviary. True, said she, let us go to it. I durst not as yet declare what I thought of this aviary; but there was something in the idea of it which displeased me, and did not seem to correspond with the rest.

We went down, through a thousand turnings, to the bottom of the orchard, where I found all the water collected in a fine rivulet, flowing gently between two rows of old willows, which had been frequently lopped. Their tops being hollow and half bare, formed a kind of vessel, from whence, by the contrivance I just now mentioned, grew several tufts of honey-suckles, of
which

which one part intertwined among the branches, and the other dropped carelessly along the side of the rivulet. Near the extremity of the inclosure, was a little bason, bordered with grass, bulrushes, and weeds, which served as a watering-place to the aviary, and was the last use made of this water, so precious and so well managed.

A little beyond this bason was a platform, which was terminated, in an angle of the inclosure, by a hillock planted with a number of little trees of all kinds; the smallest stood towards the summit, and their size increased, in proportion as the ground grew lower, which made their tops appear to be horizontal, or at least shewed that they were one day intended to be so. In the front stood a dozen of trees, which were young as yet, but of a nature to grow very large, such as the beech, the elm, the ash, and the acacia. The groves on this side served as an asyllum to that vast number of birds which I had heard chirping at a distance; and it was under the shade of this foliage, as under a large umbrella, that you might see them hop about, run, frisk, provoke each other, and fight, as if they had not perceived us. They were so far from flying at our approach, that according to the notion with which I was prepossessed, I imagined them to have been inclosed within a wire; but when we came to the border of the bason, I saw several of them alight, and come towards us through a short walk which parted the platform in two, and made a communication between the bason and the aviary. Mr Wolmar then going round the bason, scattered two or three handfuls of mixed-grain, which he had in his

pocket, along the walk, and when he retired, the birds flocked together and began to feed like so many chickens, with such an air of familiarity, that I plainly perceived they had been trained up to it. This is charming, said I: your using the word aviary, surprised me at first, but I now see what it is; I perceive that you invite them as your guests, instead of confining them as your prisoners. What do you mean by our guests? replied Julia; it is we who are theirs. They are masters here, and we pay them for admitting us sometimes. Very well, said I, but how did these masters get possession of this spot? How did you collect together so many voluntary inhabitants? I never heard of any attempt of this kind, and if I had not ocular proof of it, I could not have believed that such a design could have succeeded.

Time and patience, said Mr Wolmar, have worked this miracle. These are expedients which the rich scarce ever think of in their pleasures. Always in haste for enjoyment, force and money are the only instruments they know how to employ; they have birds in cages, and friends at so much a month. If the servants ever came near this place, you would soon see the birds disappear; and if you perceive vast numbers of them at present, the reason is, that this spot has always, in some degree, been a refuge for them. There is no bringing them together where there are none to invite them; but where there are some already, it is easy to increase their numbers, by anticipating all their wants, by not frightening them, by suffering them to hatch with security, and by never disturbing the
young

young ones in their nest; for by these means, such as there are, abide there, and those which come after them continue. This grove was already in being, though it was divided from the orchard; Julia has only inclosed it by a quick-set hedge, removed that which parted it, and enlarged and adorned it with new designs. You see to the right and left of the walk which leads to it, two spaces filled with a confused mixture of grass, straw, and all sorts of plants. She orders them every year to be sown with corn, millet, turnsol, hemp-seed, vetch, and in general all sorts of grain which birds are fond of, and nothing is ever reaped. Besides this, almost every day she or I bring them something to eat; and when we neglect, Fanny supplies our place. They are supplied with water, as you see, very easily. Mrs Wolmar carries her attention so far as to provide for them, every spring, little heaps of hair, straw, wool, moss, and other materials proper to build their nests. Thus by their having materials at hand, provisions in abundance, and by the great care we take to secure them from their enemies*, the uninterrupted tranquillity they enjoy induces them to lay their eggs in this convenient place, where they want for nothing, and where nobody disturbs them. Thus the habitation of the fathers becomes the abode of the children, and the colony thrives and multiplies.

Ah! said Julia, do you see nothing more? No one thinks beyond himself; but the affection

B 3

of

* The mice, owls, hawks, and, above all, children.

of a constant pair, the zeal of their domestic concerns, paternal and maternal fondness, all this is lost upon you. Had you been here two months ago, you might have feasted your eyes with the most lovely sight and have gratified your feelings with the most tender sensations in nature. Madam, said I, somewhat gravely, you are a wife and a mother; these are pleasures of which it becomes you to be susceptible. Mr Wolmar then taking me cordially by the hand, said, You have friends, and those friends have children; how can you be a stranger to paternal affection? I looked at him, I looked at Julia, they looked at each other, and cast such an affecting eye upon me, that embracing them alternately, I said with tender emotion, They are as dear to me as to yourself. I do not know by what strange effect a single word can make such an alteration in our minds; but since that moment, Mr Wolmar appears to me quite another man, and I consider him less in the light of a husband to her whom I have so long adored, as in that of the father of two children for whom I would lay down my life.

I was going to walk round the basin, in order to draw nearer to this delightful asylum, and its little inhabitants; but Mrs Wolmar checked me. Nobody, says she, goes to disturb them in their dwelling, and you are the first of our guests whom I ever brought so far. There are four keys to this orchard, of which my father and we have each of us one: Fanny has the fourth, as superintendant, and to bring the children here now and then; the value of which favour is greatly enhanced by the extreme
circum-

circumspection which is required of them while they are here. Even Gustin never comes hither without one of the four: when the two spring months are over in which his labours are useful, he scarce ever comes hither afterwards, and all the rest we do ourselves. Thus, said, I for fear of making your birds slaves to you, you make yourselves slaves to your birds. This, she replied, is exactly the sentiment of a tyrant, who never thinks that he enjoys liberty, but while he is disturbing the freedom of others.

As we were coming back, Mr Wolmar threw a handful of barley into the basin, and on looking into it, I perceived some little fish. Ah, ah, said I, immediately, here are some prisoners nevertheless. Yes, said he, they are prisoners of war, who have had their lives spared. Without doubt, added his wife. Some time since Fanny stole two perch out of the kitchen, and brought them hither without my knowledge. I leave them here, for fear of offending her if I sent them to the lake; for it is better to confine the fish in too narrow a compass, than to disoblige a worthy creature. You are in the right, said I, and the fish are not much to be pitied for having escaped from the frying-pan into the water.

Well, how does it appear to you? said she, as we were coming back; are you got to the end of the world yet? No, I replied, I am quite out of the world, and you have in truth transported me into elysium. The pompous name she has given this orchard, said Mr Wolmar, very well deserves that raillery. Be modest in your commendation of childish amusements, and be assured

assured that they have never intrenched on the concerns of the mistress of a family. I know it, I am sure of it; I replied, and childish amusements please me more in this way than the labours of men.

Still there is one thing here, I continued, which I cannot conceive: which is, that tho' a place so different from what it was, can never have been altered to its present state, but by great care and culture; yet I can no where discover the least trace of cultivation. Every thing is verdant, fresh, and vigorous, and the hand of the gardener is no where to be discerned: nothing contradicts the idea of a desert island, which struck me at my first entrance, and I cannot perceive any footsteps of men. Oh, said Mr Wolmar, it is because they have taken great pains to efface them. I have frequently been witness to, and sometimes an accomplice in, this roguery. They sow all the cultivated spots with grass, which presently hides all appearance of culture. In the winter, they cover all the dry and barren spots with some lays of manure, the manure eats up the moss, revives the grass and the plants; the trees themselves do not fare the worse, and in the summer there is nothing of it to be seen. With regard to the moss which covers some of the walks, Lord B—— sent us the secret of making it grow from England. These two sides, he continued, were inclosed with walls; the walls have been covered, not with hedges, but with thick trees, which make the boundaries of the place appear like the beginning of a wood. The two other sides are secured by strong thickset hedges well stocked
with

with maple, hawthorn, holy-oak, privet, and other small trees, which destroy the appearance of the hedges, and make them look more like coppice-woods. You see nothing here in an exact row, nothing level; the line never entered this place; nature plants nothing by the line; the affected irregularity of the winding walks are managed with art, in order to prolong the walk, to hide the boundaries of the island, and to enlarge its extent in appearance, without making inconvenient and too frequent turnings *.

Upon considering the whole, I thought it somewhat extraordinary that they should take so much pains to conceal the labour they had been at; would it not have been better to have taken no such pains? Notwithstanding all we have told you, replied Julia, you judge of the labour from its effect, and you deceive yourself. All that you see are wild and vigorous plants, which need only to be put into the earth, and which afterwards spring up of themselves. Besides, nature seems desirous of hiding her real charms from the sight of men, because they are too little sensible of them, and disfigure them when they are within their reach; she flies from public places; it is on the tops of mountains, in the midst of forests, in desert islands, that she displays her most affecting charms. They who are in love with her, and cannot go so far in pursuit of her, are forced to do her
vio-

* Like those fashionable little woods, so ridiculously twisted, that you are obliged to walk in a zigzag manner, and to make a *pirouette* at every step.

violence, by obliging her, in some measure, to come and dwell with them, and all this cannot be effected without some degree of illusion.

At these words, I was struck with an idea which made them laugh. I am supposing to myself, said I, some rich man to be master of this house, and to bring an architect who is paid an extravagant price for spoiling nature. With what disdain would he enter this plain and simple spot! With what contempt would he order the ragged plants to be torn up! What fine lines he would draw! What fine walks he would cut! What fine geese-feet, what fine trees in the shape of umbrells and fans he would make! What fine arbor-work—nicely cut out! What beautiful grass-plots of fine English turf, round, square, sloping, oval! What fine yew-trees cut in the shape of dragons, pagods, marmosets, and all sorts of monsters! With what fine vases of brass, with what fine fruit in stone he would decorate his garden *! When he had done all this, said Mr Wolmar, he would have made a very fine place, which would scarce ever be frequented, and from whence one should always go with eagerness to enjoy the country; a dismal place where nobody would walk, but only use it as a thoroughfare when they were setting out; whereas, in my rural rambles, I often make haste to return, that I may walk here. I see.

* I am persuaded, that some time hence gardens will be furnished with nothing belonging to the country; neither plants nor trees will be suffered to grow in them: we shall see nothing but porcelain flowers, baboons, arbor-work, gravel of all colours, and fine vases with nothing in them.

see nothing in those extensive grounds so lavishly ornamented, but the vanity of the proprietor and of the artist, who being eager to display, the one his riches and the other his talents, only contribute, at a vast expence, to tire those who would enjoy their works. A false taste of grandeur, which was never designed for man, poisons all his pleasures. An air of greatness has always something melancholy in it; it leads us to consider the wretchedness of those who affect it. In the midst of these grass-plots and fine walks, the little individual does not grow greater; a tree twenty feet high will shelter him as well as one of sixty*; he never occupies a space of more than three feet, and in the midst of his immense possessions is lost like a poor worm.

There is another taste directly opposite to this, and still more ridiculous, because it does not allow us the pleasure of walking, for which gardens were intended. I understand you, said I; you allude to those petty virtuosi, who die away at the sight of a ranunculus, and fall prostrate before a tulip. Hereupon, my Lord, I gave them an account of what happened to me formerly

* He might have enlarged on the bad taste of lopping trees in such a ridiculous manner, to make them shoot into the clouds, by taking off their fine tops, by draining the sap, and preventing their thriving. This method, it is true, supplies the gardeners with wood, but it robs the kingdom of it, which is not overstocked already. One would imagine that nature was different in France, from what it is in any other part of the world, they take so much pains to disfigure her. The parks are planted with nothing but long poles; they are like so many forests of masts, and you walk in the midst of woods without finding any shelter.

formerly at London in the flower-garden into which we were introduced with so much ceremony, and where we saw all the treasures of Holland displayed with so much lustre upon four beds of dung. I did not forget the ceremony of the umbrello and the little rod with which they honoured me, unworthy as I was, as well as the rest of the spectators. I modestly acknowledged how, by endeavouring to appear a virtuoso in my turn, and venturing to fall in ecstasies at the sight of a tulip which seemed to be of a fine shape and of a lively colour, I was mocked, hooted at, and hissed by all the connoisseurs; and how the florist, who despised the flower, despised its panegyrist likewise to that degree, that he did not even deign to look at me all the time we were together. I added, that I supposed he highly regretted having prostituted his rod and umbrello on one so unworthy.

This taste, said Mr Wolmar, when it degenerates into a passion, has something idle and little in it, which renders it puerile and ridiculously expensive. The other, at least, is noble, grand, and has something real in it. But what is the value of a curious root which an insect gnaws and spoils perhaps as soon as it is purchased, or of a flower which is beautiful at noon-day, and fades before sun-set? what signifies a mere imaginary beauty, which is only obvious to the eyes of virtuosi, and which is a beauty only because they will have it to be so? The time will come when they will require different kinds of beauty in flowers, from that which they seek after at present, and with as good reason; then

then you will be the connoisseur in your turn, and your virtuoso will appear ignorant. All these trifling attentions, which degenerate into a kind of study, are unbecoming a rational being, who would keep his body in moderate exercise, or relieve his mind by amusing himself in a walk with his friends. Flowers were made to delight our eyes as we pass along, and not to be so curiously anatomised *. See the queen of them shine in every part of the orchard. It perfumes the air, it ravishes the eyes, and costs neither care nor culture. It is for this reason that florists despise it; nature has made it so lovely, that they cannot add to it in any borrowed beauty; and as they cannot plague themselves with cultivating it, they find nothing in it which flatters their fancy. The mistake of your pretenders to taste is, that they are desirous of introducing art in every thing, and are never satisfied unless the art appears; whereas true taste consists in concealing it, especially when it concerns any of the works of nature. To what purpose are those strait gravelled walks which we meet with continually; and those stars which are so far from making a park appear more extensive to the view, as is commonly supposed, that they only contribute awkwardly to discover its boundaries? Do you ever see fine gravel in woods, or is that kind of gravel softer to the feet than moss or down? Does nature constantly make use of

VOL. III.

I

C

the

* The sagacious Wolmar had not sufficiently reflected. Was he, who was so skilful in judging of men, so bad a judge of nature? Did he not know, that if the author of nature displays his greatness in great things, he appears still greater in those which are the least?

the square or rule? Are they afraid lest she should be visible in some spots, notwithstanding all their care to disfigure her? Upon the whole, it is droll enough to see them affect to walk in a straight line, that they may sooner reach the end, as if they were tired of walking, before they have well begun? Would not one imagine, by their taking the shortest cut, that they were going a journey instead of a walk, and that they were in a hurry to get out as soon as they come in?

How will a man of taste act, who lives to relish life, who knows how to enjoy himself, who pursues real and simple pleasures, and who is inclined to make a walk before his house? He will make it so convenient and agreeable, that he may enjoy it every hour of the day; and yet so natural and simple, that it will seem as if he had done nothing. He will introduce water, and will make the walk verdant, cool, and shady; for nature herself unites these properties. He will bestow no attention on symmetry, which is the bane of nature and variety, and the walks of gardens in general are so like each other, that we always fancy ourselves in the same. He will make the ground smooth, in order to walk more conveniently; but the two sides of his walks will not be exactly parallel; their direction will not always be recti-lineal; they will be somewhat irregular, like the steps of an indolent man, who saunters in his walk. He will not be anxious about opening distant perspectives. The taste for perspective and distant views proceeds from the disposition of men in general, who are never satisfied with the place where they are.

They

They are always desirous of what is distant from them; and the artist who cannot make them contented with the objects around them, flies to this resource to amuse them; but such a man as I speak of, is under no such inquietudes; when he is agreeably fixed, he does not desire to be elsewhere. Here, for example, we have no prospect, and we are very well satisfied without any. We are willing to think that all the charms of nature are inclosed here, and I should be very much afraid lest a distant view should take off a good deal of the beauty from this walk. *. Certainly he who would not chuse to pass his days in this simple and pleasant place, is not master of true taste or of a vigorous mind. I confess that one ought not to make a parade of bringing strangers hither; but then we can enjoy it ourselves, without shewing it to any one.

Sir, said I, those rich people who have such fine gardens, have very good reasons for not chusing to walk alone, or to be in company with

C 2

them-

* I do not know whether there has ever been an attempt to give a slight curve to these long walks, that the eye may not be able to reach the end of the walk, and that the opposite extremity may be hid from the spectator. It is true the beauty of the prospects in perspective would be lost by these means; but proprietors would reap one advantage which they generally prize at a high rate, which is that of making their grounds more extensive in appearance, and in the midst of a starry plot thus bounded, one might think himself in a vast park. I am persuaded that the walk would be less tiresome, though more solitary; for whatever gives play to the imagination, excites ideas, and nourishes the mind: but gardeners are people who have no idea of these things. How often in a rural spot, would the pencil drop from their hands, as it did from Le Nostre's, in St James's park, if they knew like him what gave life to nature, and interested the beholder?

themselves only; therefore they are in the right to lay them out for the pleasure of others. Besides, I have seen gardens in China, made after your taste, and laid out with so much art, that the art was not seen; but in such a costly manner, and kept up at such a vast expence, that that single idea destroyed all the pleasure I had in viewing them. There were rocks, grottos, and artificial cascades, in level and sandy places, where there was nothing but spring-water; there were flowers and curious plants of all the climates in China and Tartary, collected and cultivated in the same soil. It is true, there were no fine walks or regular compartments; but you might see curiosities heaped together with profusion, which in nature are only to be found separate and scattered. Nature was there represented under a thousand various forms, and yet the whole taken together was not natural. Here neither earth nor stones are transplanted, you have neither pumps nor reservoirs, you have no occasion for green-houses, or stoves, or bell-glasses, or straw-beds. A plain spot of ground has been improved by a few simple ornaments. A few common herbs and trees, and a few purling streams, which flow without pomp or constraint, have contributed to embellish it. It is an amusement which has cost little trouble, and the simplicity of it is an additional pleasure to the beholder.

I can conceive that this place might be made still more agreeable, and yet be infinitely less pleasing to me. Such, for example, is Lord Cobham's celebrated park at Stow. It consists of places extremely beautiful and picturesque;
mo-

modelled after the fashion of different countries, and in which every thing appears natural except their conjunction, as in the gardens of China, which I just now mentioned. The proprietor who made this stately solitude, has even erected ruins, temples, old buildings, and different ages as well as different places are collected with more than mortal magnificence. This is the very thing I dislike. I would have the amusements of mankind carry an air of ease with them which does not put one in mind of their weakness; and that while we admire these curiosities, our imagination may not be disturbed by reflecting on the vast sums of money and labour they have cost. Are we not destined to trouble enough, without throwing fatigue into our very amusements?

I have but one objection, added I, looking at Julia, to make to your elysium, but which you will probably think of some weight, which is, that it is a superfluous amusement. To what purpose was it to make a new walk, when you have such beautiful groves on the other side of the house which you neglect? That is true, said she, somewhat disconcerted, but I like this better. If you had thoroughly reflected on the propriety of your question before you had made it, said Mr Wolmar, interrupting us, it might be imputed to you as more than an indiscretion. My wife has never set her foot in those groves since she has been married. I know the reason, though she has always kept it a secret from me. You who are no stranger to it, learn to respect the spot where you are; it has been planted by the hands of virtue.

I had scarce received this just reprimand, when the little family, led by Fanny, came in as we were going out. These three lovely children ran and embraced their parents ; I likewise shared their little careffes. Julia and I returned into the elysium to take a little turn with them ; and afterwards went to join Mr Wolmar, who was talking to some workmen. In our way, she told me, that she no sooner became a mother, than an idea struck into her mind, with respect to that walk, which increased her zeal for embellishing it. I had an eye, said she, to the health and amusement of my children as they grew up. It requires more care than labour to keep up this place ; it is more essential to give a certain turn to the branches of the plants, than to dig and cultivate the ground ; I intend one day to make gardeners of my little ones : they shall have sufficient exercise to strengthen their constitution, and not enough to enfeeble it. Besides, what is too much for their age, shall be done by others, and they shall confine themselves to such little works as may amuse them. I cannot describe, says she, what pleasure I enjoy in imagining my infants busy in returning those little attentions which I now bestow on them with such satisfaction, and the joy of which their tender hearts will be susceptible, when they see their mother walking with delight under the shades which have been formed by their own hands. In truth, my friend, said she, with an affecting tone, time thus spent is an emblem of the felicity of the next world, and it was not without reason that, reflecting on these scenes, I
christ-

christened this place beforehand by the name of Elysium.

My Lord, this incomparable woman is as amiable in the character of a mother as in that of a wife, a friend, a daughter, and to the eternal punishment of my soul, she was thus lovely when my mistress.

Transported with this delightful place, I intreated them in the evening to consent that, during my stay, Fanny should entrust me with her key, and consign to me the office of feeding the birds. Julia immediately sent a sack of grain to my chamber, and gave me her own key. I cannot tell for what reason, but I accepted it with a kind of concern, and it seemed as if Mr Wolmar's would have been more acceptable to me.

In the morning I rose early, and, with all the eagerness of a child, went to lock myself in the desert island. What agreeable ideas did I hope to carry with me into that solitary place, where the mild aspect of nature alone was sufficient to banish from my remembrance all that new-coined system which had made me so miserable ! Every object around me will be the work of her whom I adore. In every thing about me, I shall behold her image ; I shall see nothing which her hand has not touched ; I shall kiss the flowers which have been her carpet ; I shall inhale, with the morning dew, the air which she has breathed ; the taste she has displayed in her amusement will bring all her charms present to my imagination, and in every thing she will appear the Julia of my soul.

As I entered elysium with this temper of mind,
I sud-

I suddenly recollected the last word which Mr Wolmar said to me yesterday very near the same spot. The recollection of that single word, instantly changed my whole frame of mind. I thought that I beheld the image of virtue, where I expected to find that of pleasure. That image intruded on my imagination with the charms of Mrs Wolmar, and for the first time since my return I saw Julia in her absence; not such as she appeared to me formerly, and as I still love to represent her, but such as she appears to my eyes every day. My Lord, I imagined that I beheld that amiable, that chaste, that virtuous woman, in the midst of the train which surrounded her yesterday. I saw those three lovely children, those honourable and precious pledges of conjugal union and tender friendship, play about her, and give and receive a thousand affecting caresses. At her side, I beheld the grave Wolmar, that husband so beloved, and so worthy of his happiness. I imagined that I could perceive his judicious and penetrating eye pierce to the very bottom of my soul, and make me blush again; I fancied that I heard him utter reproaches which I too well deserved, and repeat lectures to which I had attended in vain. Last in her train I saw Fanny Regnard, a lively instance of the triumph of virtue and humanity over the most ardent passion. Ah! what guilty thought could reach so far as her, through such an impervious guard? With what indignation I suppressed the shameful transports of a criminal and scarce extinguished passion! and how I should have despised myself had I contaminated with a single sigh such a ravishing scene

scene of honour and innocence! I recalled to mind the reflections she made as we were going out; then my imagination attending her into that futurity on which she delights to contemplate, I saw that affectionate mother wipe the sweat from her childrens foreheads, kiss their ruddy cheeks, and devote that heart, which was formed for love, to the most tender sentiments of nature. There was nothing, even to the very name of elysium, but what contributed to rectify my rambling imagination, and to inspire my soul with a calm far preferable to the agitation of the most seductive passions. The word Elysium seemed to me an emblem of the purity of her mind who adopted it; and I concluded that she would never have made choice of that name, had she been tormented with a troubled conscience. Peace, said I, reigns in the inmost recesses of her soul, as in this asylum which she has named.

I had proposed to myself an agreeable reverie, and my reflections there were more agreeable even than I expected. I passed two hours in elysium, which were not inferior to any time I ever spent. In observing with what rapidity and delight they passed away, I perceived that there was a kind of felicity in meditating on honest reflections, which the wicked never know, and which consists in being pleased with one's self. If we were to reflect on this without prejudice, I do not know any other pleasure can equal it. I perceive, at least, that one who loves solitude as I do, ought to be extremely cautious not to do any thing which may make it tormenting. Perhaps these principles may
lead

lead us to discover the spring of the false judgment of mankind with regard to vice and virtue; for the enjoyment of virtue is all internal, and is only perceived by him who feels it: but all the advantages of vice strike the imagination of others, and only he who has purchased them know what they cost.

*Se a ciascun l' interno affanno
Si legesse in fronte scritto,
Quanti mai, che invidia fanno
Ci farebbero pietà ? **

The aching heart and smiling face
Thus may our envy move,
Which, did we know the wretched's case,
Would our compassion prove.

As it grew late before I perceived it, Mr Wolmar came to join me, and acquaint me that Julia and the tea waited for me. It is you yourselves, said I, making an apology, who prevented my coming sooner: I was so delighted with the evening I spent yesterday, that I went thither again to enjoy this morning: luckily there

* He might have added the conclusion, which is very fine, and no less apposite to the subject.

*Si vedria che i lor nemici
Anno in seno, e si reduce
Nel parere a noi felici
Ogni lor felicità.*

So when, reduc'd or bent with years,
Poor mortals sigh for rest,
Each, wretched as he yet appears,
With something still is blest.

there is no harm done; and as you have waited for me, my morning is not lost. That is true, said Mr Wolmar; it would be better to wait till noon, than lose the pleasure of breakfasting together. Strangers are never admitted into my room in the morning, but breakfast in their own. Breakfast is the repast of intimates; servants are excluded, and impertinents never appear at that time: we then declare all we think, we reveal all our secrets, we disguise none of our sentiments; we can then enjoy the delights of intimacy and confidence, without indiscretion. It is almost the only time in which we are allowed to appear what we really are; why cannot it last the day through! Ah, Julia! I was ready to say; this is an interesting wish! but I was silent. The first thing I learned to suppress with my love, was flattery. To praise people to their face, unless indeed it be one's mistress, is but to tax them with vanity. You know, my Lord, whether Mrs Wolmar deserves this reproach. No; I respect her too much, not to respect her in silence. Is it not a sufficient commendation of her, to listen to her, and observe her conduct?

LETTER CXXXI.

Mrs WOLMAR to Mrs ORBE.

MY dear friend, is it not decreed that you are on all occasions to be my safeguard against myself? and that after having delivered me with so much difficulty from the snares which
my

my affections laid for me, you are yet to rescue me from those which reason spreads out? After so many cruel instances, I have learned to guard against mistakes, as much as against my passions, which are frequently the cause of them. Why had I not always the same precaution! If in time past, I had relied less on the light of my own understanding, I should have had less reason to blush at my sentiments.

But let not this preamble alarm you. I should be unworthy your friendship, if I was still under a necessity of consulting you upon dismal subjects. Guilt was always a stranger to my heart, and I dare believe it to be more distant from me now than ever. Therefore, Clara, attend to me patiently, and believe that I shall never need your advice in difficulties which honour alone can resolve.

During these six years which I have lived with Mr Wolmar in the most perfect union which can subsist between a married couple, you know that he never talked to me either about his family or himself; and that having received him from a father as solicitous for his daughter's happiness as jealous of the honour of his family, I never expressed any eagerness to know more of his concerns than he thought proper to communicate. Satisfied with being indebted to him for my honour, my repose, my reason, my children, and all that can render me estimable in my own eyes, besides the life of him who gave me being, I was convinced that the particulars concerning him, to which I was a stranger, would not falsify what I knew of him, and there was no occasion for my knowing more, in
order

order to love, esteem, and honour him as much as possible.

This morning at breakfast he proposed our taking a little walk before the heat of the day came on; then under a pretence of not going through the country in a morning dishabille, as he said, he led us into the woods, and exactly into that wood where all the misfortunes of my life commenced. In approaching that fatal spot, I felt a violent palpitation of heart, and should have refused to have gone in, if shame had not checked me, and if the recollection of a word which dropped the other day in elysium, had not made me dread the interpretations which might have been passed on such a refusal. I do not know whether the philosopher was more composed; but sometime after, having cast my eyes upon him by chance, I found his countenance pale and altered, and I cannot express to you the uneasiness it gave me.

On entering into the wood, I perceived my husband cast a glance towards me, and smile. He sat down between us, and after a moment's pause, taking us both by the hand, My dear children, said he, I begin to perceive that my schemes will not be fruitless, and that we three may be connected by a lasting attachment, capable of promoting our common good, and procuring me some comfort to alleviate the troubles of approaching old age: but I am better acquainted with you two, than you are with me: it is but just to make every thing equal among us; and though I have nothing very interesting to impart, yet as you have no secrets hidden

from me, neither will I have any concealed from you.

He then revealed to us the mystery of his birth, which had hitherto been known to no one but my father. When you are acquainted with it, you will imagine what great temper and moderation a man must be master of, who was able to conceal such a secret from his wife, during six years; but it is no pain to him to keep such a secret, and he thinks too slightly of it, to be obliged to exert any vast efforts to conceal it.

I will not detain you, said he, with relating the occurrences of my life. It is of less importance to you to be acquainted with my adventures than with my character. The former are simple in their nature like the latter; and when you know what I am, you will easily imagine what I was capable of doing. My mind is naturally calm, and my affections temperate. I am one of these men, whom people think they reproach when they call them insensible; that is, when they upbraid them with having no passion, which may impel them to swerve from the true direction of human nature. Being but little susceptible of pleasure or grief, I receive but faint impressions from those interesting sentiments of humanity, which make the affections of others our own. If I feel uneasiness when I see the worthy in distress, it is not without reason that my compassion is moved; for when I see the wicked suffer, I have no pity for them. My only active principle is a natural love of order, and the concurrence of the accidents of fortune with the conduct of mankind well combined together,

gether, pleases me exactly like beautiful symmetry in a picture, or like a piece well represented on the stage. If I have any ruling passion, it is that of observation: I love to read the hearts of mankind. As my own seldom misleads me, as I make my observations with a disinterested and dispassionate temper, and as I have acquired some sagacity by long experience, I am seldom deceived in my judgment: this advantage therefore is the only recompense which self-love receives from my constant studies; for I am not fond of acting a part, but only of observing others. Society is agreeable to me for the sake of contemplation, and not as a member of it. If I could alter the nature of my being, and become a living eye, I would willingly make the exchange. Therefore my indifference about mankind does not make me independent of them: without being solicitous to be seen, I want to see them, and though they are not dear to me, they are necessary.

The two first characters in society which I had an opportunity of observing, were courtiers and valets; two orders of men who differ more in appearance than fact, but so little worthy of being attended to, and so easily read, that I was tired of them at first sight. By quitting the court, where every thing is presently seen, I secured myself, without knowing it, from the danger which threatened me, and which I should have escaped. I changed my name; and having a desire to be acquainted with military men, I solicited admission into the service of a foreign prince; it was there that I had the happiness of being useful to your father, who was impelled

by despair for having killed his friend, to expose himself rashly and contrary to his duty. The grateful and susceptible heart of a brave officer began then to give me a better opinion of human nature. He attached himself to me with that zealous friendship which it was impossible for me not to return, and from that time we formed connections which have every day grown stronger. I discovered in this new state of my mind, that interest is not always, as I had supposed, the sole motive which influences human conduct, and that among the crowd of prejudices which are opposite to virtue, there are some likewise which are favourable to it. I found that the general character of mankind was founded on a kind of self-love indifferent in itself, and either good or bad according to the accidents which modify it, and which depend on customs, laws, rank, fortune, and every circumstance relative to human policy. I therefore indulged my inclination, and despising the vain notions of wordly condition, I successively threw myself into all the different situations in life, which might enable me to compare them together, and know one by the other. I perceived (as you have observed in one of your letters, said he to St Preux) that we see nothing if we rest satisfied with looking on, that we ought to act ourselves in order to judge of men's actions; and I made myself an actor, to qualify myself for a spectator. We can always lower ourselves with ease; and I stooped to a variety of situations, which no man of my station ever condescended to. I even became a peasant; and when Julia made me her gardener, she did not find me such

a novice in the business as she might have expected.

Besides gaining a thorough knowledge of mankind, which indolent philosophy only attains in appearance, I found another advantage which I never expected. This was, the opportunity it afforded me of improving, by an active life, that love of order I derived from nature, and of acquiring a new relish for virtue by the pleasure of contributing towards it. This sentiment made me less speculative; attached me somewhat more to myself; and from a natural consequence of this progress, I perceived that I was alone. Solitude, which was always tiresome to me, became hideous, and I could not hope to escape it long. Though I did not grow less dispassionate, I found the want of some connection; the idea of decay, without any one to comfort me, afflicted me by anticipation, and for the first time in my life I experienced melancholy and uneasiness. I communicated my troubles to the Baron d'Etange. You must not, said he, grow an old bachelor. I myself, after having lived independent as it were, in a state of matrimony, find that I have a desire of returning to the duties of a husband and a father, and I am going to repose myself in the midst of my family. It depends on yourself to make my family your own, and to supply the place of the son whom I have lost. I have an only daughter to marry; she is not destitute of merit; she has a sensibility of mind, and the love of her duty makes her love every thing relative to it. She is neither a beauty, nor a prodigy of understanding; but come and see her, and believe me, that if

she does not affect you, no woman will ever make an impression on you. I came, I saw you Julia, and found that your father had reported modestly of you. Your transports, the tears of joy you shed when you embraced him, gave me the first, or rather the only emotion I ever experienced in my life. If the impression was slight, it was the only one I felt, and our sensations are strong only in proportion to those which oppose them. Three years absence made no change in my inclinations. I was no stranger to the state of yours on my return, and on this occasion I must make you a return for the confession which hast cost you so dear. Judge, my dear Clara, with what extraordinary surprise I learnt that all my secrets had been discovered to him before our marriage, and that he had wedded me, knowing me to be the property of another.

This conduct, continued Mr Wolmar, was unpardonable. I offended against delicacy; I sinned against prudence; I exposed your honour and my own; I should have been apprehensive of plunging you and myself into irretrievable calamities; but I loved you, and I loved nothing but you. Every thing else was indifferent to me. How is it possible to restrain a passion, be it ever so weak, when it has no counterpoise? This is the inconvenience of calm and dispassionate tempers. Every thing goes right while their insensibility secures them from temptations; but if one happens to touch them, they are conquered as soon as they are attacked; and reason, which governs while she sways alone, has no power to resist the slightest effort. I was tempted but once, and I gave way to it. If the
in-

intoxication of any other passion had rendered me wavering, I should have fallen, every false step I took ; none but spirited souls are able to struggle and conquer. All great efforts, all sublime actions, are their province; cool reason never atchieved any thing illustrious, and we can only triumph over our passions by opposing one against another. When virtue gains the ascendancy, she reigns alone, and keeps all in due poise: this forms the true philosopher, who is as much exposed to the assaults of passion as another, but who alone is capable of subduing them by their own force, as a pilot steers through adverse winds.

You find that I do not attempt to extenuate my fault ; had it been one, I should infallibly have committed it ; but I knew you, Julia, and was guilty of none when I married you. I perceived that all my prospect of happiness depended on you alone ; and that if any one was capable of making you happy, it was myself. I knew that peace and innocence were essential to your mind, that the affection with which it was pre-engaged could not afford these, and that nothing could banish love but the horror of guilt. I saw that your soul laboured under an oppression which it could not shake off but by some new struggle ; and that to make you sensible how valuable you still were, was the only way to render you truly estimable.

Your heart was formed for love ; I therefore slighted the disproportion of age, which excluded me from a right of pretending to that affection, which he who was the object of it could not enjoy, and which it was impossible to obtain

tain for any other. On the contrary, finding my life half spent, and that I had been susceptible but of a single impression, I concluded that it would be lasting, and I pleased myself with the thoughts of preserving it the rest of my days. In all my tedious searches, I found nothing so estimable as yourself; I thought that what you could not effect, no one in the world could accomplish; I ventured to rely on your virtue, and I married you. The secrecy you observed, did not surprise me: I knew the reason; and from your prudent conduct, I guessed how long it would last. From a regard to you, I copied your reserve; and I would not deprive you of the honour of one day making me a confession, which, I plainly perceived, was at your tongue's end every minute. I have not been deceived in any particular; you have fully answered all I expected from you. When I made choice of a wife, I desired to find in her an amiable, discreet, and happy companion. The first two requisites have been obtained. I hope, my dear, that we shall not be disappointed of the third.

At these words, in spite of all my endeavours not to interrupt him but by my tears, I could not forbear throwing myself round his neck, and crying out, "O my dear husband! O thou
" best and most amiable of men! Tell me what
" is wanting to complete my happiness, but to
" promote your felicity, and to be more deserving." . . . You are as happy as you can be, said he, interrupting me; you deserve to be so; but it is time to enjoy that felicity in peace, which has hitherto cost you such vast pains. If
your

your fidelity had been all I required, that would have been insured the moment you made me the promise : I wanted, further, to make it easy and agreeable to you ; and we have both laboured to this end in concert, without communicating our views to each other. Julia, we have succeeded ; better than you imagine perhaps. The only fault I find in you is, that you do not resume that confidence which you have a right to repose in yourself, and that you undervalue your own worth. Extreme diffidence is as dangerous as excessive confidence. As that rashness which prompts us to attempts beyond our strength, renders our power ineffectual ; so that timidity which prevents us from relying on ourselves, renders it useless. True prudence consists in being thoroughly acquainted with the measure of our own power, and acting up to it. You have acquired an increase of strength by changing your condition. You are no longer that unfortunate girl who bewailed the weakness she indulged ; you are the most virtuous of women ; you are bound by no laws but those of honour and duty ; and the only fault that can now be imputed to you, is, that you retain too lively a sense of your former indiscretions. Instead of taking reproachful precautions against yourself, learn to depend upon yourself, and your confidence will increase your strength. Banish that injurious diffidence, and think yourself happy in having made choice of an honest man at an age which is liable to imposition, and in having entertained a lover formerly, whom you may now enjoy as a friend, even under your husband's eye. I was no soon-

er

er made acquainted with your connections, than I judged of you by each other. I perceived what enthusiastic delusion led you astray; it never operates but on susceptible minds; it sometimes ruins them, but it is by a charm which has power to seduce them alone. I judged that the same turn of mind which formed your attachment would break it as soon as it became criminal; and that in such hearts as yours vice might find an entrance, but never could take root.

I conceived moreover, that the connection between you ought not to be broken; that there were so many laudable circumstances attending your mutual attachment, that it ought rather to be rectified than destroyed; and that neither of the two could forget the other, without diminishing their own worth. I knew that great struggles only served to inflame strong passions; and that if violent efforts exercise the mind, they occasion such torments as by their continuance might subdue it. I took advantage of Julia's gentleness to moderate the severity of her reflections. I nourished her friendship for you, said he to St Preux; I banished all immoderate passion, and I believe that I have preserved you a greater share of her affections, than she would have left you had I abandoned her entirely to herself.

My success encouraged me; and I determined to attempt your cure, as I had accomplished her's: for I had an esteem for you; and notwithstanding the prejudices of vice, I have always observed that every good end is to be obtained from susceptible minds by means of confidence

fidence and sincerity. I saw you, you did not deceive me; you will not deceive me; and tho' you are not yet what you ought to be, I find you more improved than you imagine, and I am better satisfied with you than you are with yourself. I know that my conduct has an extravagant appearance, and is repugnant to the common-received principles: but maxims become less general, in proportion as we are better acquainted with the human heart; and the husband of Julia ought not to act like common men. My dear children, said he, with a tone the more affecting as it came from a dispassionate man, remain what you are, and we shall all be happy. Danger consists chiefly in opinion; be not afraid of yourselves, and you will have nothing to apprehend; only think on the present, and I will answer for the future. I cannot communicate any thing farther to-day; but if my schemes succeed, and my hopes do not betray me, our destiny will be better fulfilled, and you two will be much happier than if you had enjoyed each other.

As we rose, he embraced us, and would have us likewise embrace each other, on that spot. . . . on that very spot where formerly . . . Clara, O my dear Clara, how dearly have you ever loved me! I made no resistance. Alas! How indiscreet would it have been to have made any! This kiss was nothing like that which rendered the grove terrible to me. I silently congratulated myself, and I found that my heart was more changed than I had hitherto ventured to imagine.

As we were walking towards home, my husband,

band, taking me by the hand, stopt me, and shewing me the wood we had just left, he said to me, smiling, “ Julia, be no longer afraid of “ this asylum; it has not been lately profaned.” You will not believe me, cousin, but I swear that he has some supernatural gift of reading one’s inmost thoughts: may heaven continue it to him! Having such reason to despise myself, it is certainly to this art that I am indebted for his indulgence.

You do not see yet any occasion I have for your advice; patience, my angel! I am coming to that point; but the conversation which I have related, was necessary to clear up what follows.

On our return, my husband, who has long been expected at Etange, told me that he proposed going thither to-morrow, that he should see you in his way, and that he should stay there five or six days. Without saying all I thought concerning such an ill-timed journey, I told him that I imagined the necessity was not so indispensable as to oblige Mr Wolmar to leave his guest, whom he had himself invited to his house. Would you have me, he replied, use ceremony with him to remind him that he is not at home? I am like the Valaisians for hospitality. I hope he will find their sincerity here, and allow us to use their freedom. Perceiving that he would not understand me, I took another method, and endeavoured to persuade our guest to take the journey with him. You will find a spot, said I, which has its beauties, and such as you are fond of; you will visit my patrimony and that of my ancestors; the interest
you

you take in every thing which concerns me, will not allow me to suppose that such a fight can be indifferent to you. My mouth was open to add, that the castle was like that of Lord B——, —who . . . but luckily I had time to bite my tongue. He answered me coolly that I was in the right, and that he would do as I pleased. But Mr Wolmar, who seemed determined to drive me to an extremity, replied that he should do what was most agreeable to himself. Which do you like best, to go or to stay? To stay, said he, without hesitating. Well, stay then, rejoined my husband, taking him by the hand: you are a sincere and honest man, and I am well pleased with that declaration.

There was no room for much altercation between my husband and me, in the hearing of this third person. I was silent; but could not conceal my uneasiness so well, but my husband perceived it. What! said he, with an air of discontent, St Preux being at a little distance from us, shall I have pleaded your cause against yourself in vain, and will Mrs Wolmar remain satisfied with a virtue which depends on opportunity? For my part, I am more nice: I will be indebted for the fidelity of my wife, to her affection, not to chance; and it is not enough that she is constant, it wounds my delicacy to think that she should doubt her constancy.

At length, he took us into his closet, where I was extremely surprised to see him take from a drawer, along with the copies of some of our friend's correspondences which I delivered to

him, the very original letters which I thought I had seen burned by B—— in my mother's room. Here, said he to me, shewing them to us, are the pledges of my security; if they deceive me, it would be a folly to depend on any thing which concerns human nature. I consign my wife and my honour in charge to her, who, when single and seduced, preferred an act of benevolence, to a secure and private rendezvous. I trust Julia, now that she is a wife and a mother, to him who, when he had it in his power to gratify his desires, yet knew how to respect Julia when single, and a fond girl. If either of you think so meanly of yourselves, as to suppose that I am in the wrong, say so, and I retract this instant. Cousin, do you think that one could easily venture to make answer to such a speech?

I nevertheless sought an opportunity in the afternoon, of speaking with my husband in private; and without entering into reasons which I was not at liberty to urge, I only intreated him to put off his journey for two days. My request was granted immediately; and I employ the time, in sending you this express, and waiting for your answer, to know how I am to act.

I know that I need but desire my husband not to go at all, and he who never denied me any thing, will not refuse me so slight a favour. But I perceive, my dear, that he takes a pleasure in the confidence he reposes in me; and I am afraid of losing some part of his esteem, if he should suppose that I have occasion for more reserve than he allows me. I know likewise, that
I need

I need but speak a word to St Preux, and that he will accompany my husband without hesitation; but what will my husband think of the change? and can I take such a step without preserving an air of authority over St Preux, which might seem to entitle him to some privileges in his turn? I am apprehensive besides, lest he should conclude from this precaution that I find it absolutely necessary; and this step which at first sight appears most easy, is the most dangerous perhaps at the bottom. Upon the whole, however, I am not ignorant that no consideration should be put in competition with a real danger; but does this danger exist in fact? This is the very doubt which you must resolve for me.

The more I examine the present state of my mind, the more I find to encourage me. My heart is spotless, my conscience calm, I have no symptoms of fear or uneasiness, and with respect to every thing which passes within me, my sincerity before my husband costs me no trouble. Not but that certain involuntary recollections sometimes occasion tender emotions, from which I had rather be exempt: but these recollections are so far from being produced by the sight of him who was the original cause of them, that they seem to be less frequent since his return; and however agreeable it is to me to see him, yet, I know not from what strange humour, it is more agreeable to me to think of him. In a word, I find that I do not even require the aid of virtue in order to be composed in his presence; and, exclusive of the horror of guilt, it would be

very difficult to revive those sentiments which virtue has extinguished.

But is it sufficient, my dear, that my heart encourages me, when reason ought to alarm me? I have forfeited the right of depending on my own strength. Who will answer that my confidence, even now, is not an illusion of vice? How shall I rely on those sentiments which have so often deceived me? Does not guilt always spring from that pride which prompts us to despise temptation; and when we defy those dangers which have occasioned our fall, does it not shew a disposition to yield again to temptation?

Weigh all these circumstances, my dear Clara; you will find, that though they may be trifling in themselves, they are of sufficient importance to merit attention, when you consider the object they concern. Deliver me from the uncertainty into which they have thrown me. Shew me how I must behave in this critical conjuncture: for my past errors have affected my judgment, and render me diffident in deciding upon any thing. Whatever you may think of yourself, your mind, I am certain, is tranquil and composed; objects present themselves to you such as they are; but in mine, which is agitated like a troubled sea, they are confounded and disfigured. I no longer dare to depend upon any thing I see, or any thing I feel; and notwithstanding so many years repentance, I perceive, with concern, that the weight of past failings is a burden we must bear to the end of our lives.

L E T.

LETTER CXXXII.

ANSWER.

POOR Julia! what torments you continually create, while you have so much reason to live at ease! All thy misfortunes come from thyself, O Israel! If you adhered to your own maxims; if, in point of sentiment, you only hearkened to the voice within you, and your heart did but silence your reason; you would then without scruple trust to that security it inspires, and you would not constrain yourself against the testimony of your own heart, to dread a danger which can arise only from thence.

I understand you, I perfectly understand you, Julia: being more secure in yourself than you pretend to be, you have a mind to humble yourself on account of your past failings, under a pretence of preventing new ones: and your scruples are not so much precautions against the future, as a penance you impose upon yourself to atone for the indiscretion which formerly ruined you. You compare the times: do you consider? Compare situations likewise, and remember that I then reproved you for your confidence, as I now reprove you for your diffidence.

You are mistaken, my dear; but nature does not alter so soon. If we can forget our situation for want of reflection, we see it in its true light when we take pains to consider it, and we can no more conceal from ourselves our virtues than our vices. Your gentleness and devotion have given you a turn for humility. Mistrust that

dangerous virtue which only excites self-love, by making it centre in one point; and be assured, that the noble sincerity of an upright mind, is greatly preferable to the pride of humility. If moderation is necessary in wisdom, it is requisite likewise in those precautions it suggests, lest a solicitude which is reproachful to virtue should debase the mind, and, by keeping us in constant alarm, render a chimerical danger a real one. Do not you perceive, that after we have had a fall, we should hold ourselves upright; and that by leaning too much towards the side opposite, to that on which we fell, we are in danger of falling again? Cousin, you loved like Julia; now, like her, you are an extravagant devotee: I wish you may be more successful in the latter, than you were in the former! In truth, if I was less acquainted with your natural timidity, your apprehensions would be sufficient to terrify me in my turn; and if I were so scrupulous, I might, from being alarmed for you, begin to tremble for myself.

Consider farther, my dear friend; you whose system of morality is as easy and natural as it is pure and honest, do not make constructions which are harsh and foreign to your character, with respect to your maxims concerning the separation of the sexes. I agree with you, that they ought not to live together, nor after the same manner: but consider whether this important rule does not admit of many distinctions in point of practice; examine whether it ought to be applied indiscriminately, and without exceptions, to married as well as to single women, to society in general as well as to particular connections,

nections, to business as well as to amusements, and whether that honour and decency which inspire these maxims, ought not sometimes to regulate them? In well-governed countries, where the natural relations of things are attended to in matrimony, you would admit of assemblies where young persons of both sexes might see, be acquainted, and associate with each other; but you prohibit them, with good reason, from holding any private intercourse. But is not the case quite different with regard to married women and the mothers of families, who can have no interest, that is justifiable, in exhibiting themselves in public; who are confined within doors by their domestic concerns; and who should not be refused to do any thing at home which is becoming the mistress of a family? I should not like to see you in the cellars presenting the wine for the merchants to taste, nor to see you leave your children to settle accounts with a banker; but if an honest man should come to visit your husband, or to transact some business with him, will you refuse to entertain his guest in his absence, and to do him the honours of the house for fear of being left alone with him? Trace this principle to its source, and it will explain all your maxims. Why do we suppose that women ought to live retired and apart from the men? Shall we do such injustice to our sex, as to account for it upon principles drawn from our weakness, and that it is only to avoid the danger of temptations? No, my dear, these unworthy apprehensions do not become an honest woman, and the mother of a family, who is continually surrounded with objects which cherish

rish in her the sentiments of honour, and who is devoted to the most respectable duties of human nature. It is nature herself which divides us from the men, by prescribing to us different occupations; it is that amiable and timorous modesty, which, without being immediately attentive to chastity, is nevertheless its surest guardian; it is that cautious and affecting reserve, which at one and the same time cherishing both desire and respect in the hearts of men, serves as a kind of coquetry to virtue. This is the reason why even husbands themselves are not excepted out of this rule. This is the reason why the most discreet women generally maintain the greatest ascendancy over their husbands; because, by the help of this prudent reserve, without shewing any caprice or non-compliance, they know, even in the embraces of the most tender union, how to keep them at a distance, and prevent their being cloyed with them. You will agree with me, that your maxims are too general not to admit of exceptions; and that not being founded on any rigorous duty, the same principle of decorum which established them, may sometimes justify our dispensing with them.

The circumspection which you ground on your past failings, is injurious to your present condition; I will never pardon it to your heart, and I can scarce forgive it in your reason. How was it possible that the rampart which protects your person, could not secure you from such an ignominious apprehension? How could my cousin, my sister, my friend, my Julia, confound the indiscretions of a girl of too much sensibility,
with

with the infidelity of a guilty wife? Look around you, you will see nothing but what contributes to raise and support your mind. Your husband, who has such confidence in you, and whose esteem it becomes you to justify; your children, whom you would train to virtue, and who will one day deem it an honour that you was their mother; your venerable father, who is so dear to you, who enjoys your felicity, and who derives more lustre from you than from his ancestors; your friend, whose fate depends on yours, and to whom you must be accountable for a reformation to which she has contributed; her daughter, to whom you ought to set an example of those virtues which you would excite in her; your philosopher, who is a hundred times sonder of your virtues than of your person, and who respects you still more than you apprehend; lastly, yourself, who are sensible what painful efforts your discretion has cost you, and who will surely never forfeit the fruit of so much trouble in a single moment; how many motives capable of inspiring you with courage, conspire to make you ashamed of having ventured to mistrust yourself? But in order to answer for my Julia, what occasion have I to consider what she is? It is enough that I know what she was during the indiscretions which she bewails. Ah! if your heart had ever been capable of infidelity, I would allow you to be continually apprehensive; but at the very time when you imagined that you viewed it at a distance, you may conceive the horror its real existence would have occasioned you, by what you felt at that time,

time, when but to imagine it, had been to have committed it.

I remember with what astonishment we learnt that there was a nation where the weakness of a fond maid is considered as an inexpressible crime, though the adultery of a married woman is there softened by the gentle term of gallantry, and where married women publicly make themselves amends for the short-lived restraint they undergo when single. I know what maxims, in this respect, prevail in high life, where virtue passes for nothing, where every thing is empty appearance, where crimes are effaced by the difficulty of proving them, or where the proof itself becomes ridiculous against custom. But you, Julia, you who glowed with a pure and constant passion, who was guilty only in the eyes of men, and between heaven and yourself was open to no reproach; you, who made yourself respected in the midst of your indiscretions; you, who being abandoned to fruitless regret, obliged us even to adore those virtues which you had forfeited; you, who had disdained to endure self-contempt, when every thing seemed to plead in your excuse; can you be apprehensive of guilt, after having paid so dearly for your weakness? Will you dare to be afraid that you have less power now, than you had in those days which cost you so many tears? No, my dear, your former indiscretions, instead of causing any alarm ought to inspire you with courage: a repentance so severe does not lead to remorse; and whoever is so susceptible of shame, is incapable of braving infamy.

If ever a weak mind had supports against its
weak-

weakness, they are such as uphold you; if ever a vigorous mind was capable of supporting itself, what prop can yours require? Tell me, what reasonable grounds there can be for your apprehensions? All your life has been a continual struggle, in which, even after your defeat honour and duty never ceased opposition, and at length came off victorious. Ah! Julia! shall I believe, that after so much pain and torment, after twelve years passed in tears, and six spent gloriously, that you still dread a trial of eight days? In few words, deal sincerely with yourself: if there be really any danger, save your person, and blush at the condition of your heart; if there is no danger, it is an offence to your reason, it is a dishonour to your virtue, to be apprehensive of perils which can never affect it. Do you not know that there are some scandalous temptations which never approach noble minds; that it is even shameful to be under a necessity of subduing them; and that to take precautions against them, is not so much to humble, as to debase ourselves.

I do not presume to give you my arguments as unanswerable, but only to convince you that yours may be controverted, and that is sufficient to warrant my advice. Do not depend on yourself, for you do not know how to do yourself justice; nor on me, who even in your indiscretions never considered any thing but your heart, and always adored you; but refer to your husband, who sees you such as you are, and judges of you exactly according to your worth. Being, like all people of sensibility, ready to judge ill of those who appear insensible, I mistrust-

trusted his power of penetration into the secrets of susceptible minds ; but since the arrival of our traveller, I find by his letters that he reads yours perfectly well, and that there is not a single emotion which escapes his observation. I find his remarks so just and acute, that I have almost changed my opinion to the other extreme ; and I shall readily believe that your dispassionate people, who consult their eyes more than their hearts, judge better of other mens passions, than your impetuous, lively, and vain persons like myself, who always begin by supposing themselves in another's place, and can never see any thing but what they feel. However it be, Mr Wolmar is thoroughly acquainted with you, he esteems you, he loves you, and his destiny is blended with yours. What does he require, but that you would leave him to the entire direction of your conduct, with which you are afraid to trust yourself? Perhaps, finding old age coming on, he is desirous, by some trials on which he may depend, to prevent those uneasy jealousies, which an old husband generally feels who is married to a young wife ; perhaps the design he has in view requires that you should live in a state of familiarity with your friend, without alarming either your husband or yourself ; perhaps he only means to give you a testimony of confidence and esteem, worthy of that which he entertains for you. You should never oppose such sentiments, as if the weight of them was too much for you to endure ; and for my part, I think, that you cannot act more agreeably to the dictates of prudence and modesty,
than

than by relying entirely on his tenderness and understanding.

Could you, without disobliging Mr Wolmar, punish yourself for a vanity you never had, and prevent a danger which no longer exists? Remain alone with the philosopher; use all the superfluous precautions against him which would formerly have been of such service to you; maintain the same reserve as if you still mistrusted your own heart and his, as well as your own virtue. Avoid all pathetic conversation, all tender recollection of times past; break off or prevent long private interviews; be constantly surrounded by your children; do not stay long with him in a room, in elysium, or in the grove, notwithstanding the profanation. Above all things, use these precautions in so natural a manner, that they may seem to be the effect of chance, and that he may never once suspect that you are afraid of him. You love to go upon the water; but you deprive yourself of the pleasure, on account of your husband who is afraid of that element, and of your children whom you do not chuse to venture there. Take the advantage of this absence, to entertain yourself with this recreation, and leave your children to the care of Fanny. By this means you may securely devote yourself to the sweet familiarity of friendship, and quietly enjoy a long *tête-à-tête* under the protection of the watermen, who see without understanding, and from whom we cannot go far without thinking what we are about.

A thought occurs to me which many people would laugh at, but with which you will be pleased I am sure; that is, to keep an exact

journal in your husband's absence, to shew him on his return; and to think on this journal, with regard to every circumstance which is to be set down in it. In truth, I do not believe that such an expedient would be of service to many women; but a sincere mind, incapable of deceit, has many resources against vice, which others want. We ought to despise nothing which tends to preserve a purity of manners, and it is by means of trifling precautions that great virtues are secured.

Upon the whole, as your husband is to see me in his way, he will tell me, I hope, the true reasons of his journey; and if I do not find them substantial, I will dissuade him from proceeding any farther; or at all events, I will do what he has refused to do: upon this you may depend. In the mean time, I think I have said enough to fortify you against a trial of eight days. Go, Julia, I know you too well, not to answer for you as much, nay more than I could for myself. You will always be what you ought to be, and what you desire to be. If you do but rely on the integrity of your own mind, you will run no risque whatever; for I have no faith in these unforeseen defects; it is in vain to disguise voluntary failings by the idle appellation of weaknesses; no woman was ever yet overcome who had not an inclination to surrender; and if I thought that such a fate could attend you, believe me, trust to the tenderness of my friendship, rely on all the sentiments which would arise in the heart of your poor Clara, I should be too sensibly interested in your protection, to abandon you entirely to yourself.

As

As to what Mr Wolmar declared to you concerning the intelligence he received before your marriage, I am not much surpris'd at it; you know I always suspected it; and I will tell you, moreover, that my suspicions are not confined to the indiscretions of B———. I could never suppose that a man of truth and integrity like your father, and who had some suspicions at least himself, would resolve to impose upon his son-in-law and his friend. If he engaged you so strictly to secrecy, it was because the mode of discovery would come from him in a very different manner to what it would have proceeded from you; and because he was willing, no doubt, to give it a turn less likely to disgust Mr Wolmar, than that which he very well knew you would not fail to give it yourself. But I must dismiss your messenger; in a month hence, we will chat about these matters more at our leisure.

Adieu, my dearest cousin, I have preached long enough to the preacher; resume your old occupation.——— I find myself quite uneasy that I cannot be with you yet. I disorder all my affairs, by hurrying to dispatch them, and I scarce know what to do. Ah Chaillot, Chaillot . . . if I was less giddy . . . but I always hope that I shall——

P. S. A propos; I forgot to make my compliments to your highness. Tell me, I beseech you, is the gentleman your husband Atteman, Knes, or Boyard *? O poor child! You, who

F 2

have

* She did not know that the first two names are titles of distinction in Russia, but Boyard is only that of a private gentleman.

have so often lamented being born a gentlewoman, are very fortunate to become the wife of a prince! Between ourselves, nevertheless, you discover apprehensions which are somewhat vulgar for a woman of such high quality. Do not you know, that little scruples belong to mean people, and that one would laugh at a child of a good family, who should pretend to be his father's son?

L E T T E R CXXXIII.

Mr WOLMAR to Mrs ORBE.

I AM going to Etange, my sweet cousin, and I proposed to call upon you in my way: but a delay, of which you are the cause, obliges me to make more haste; and I had rather lie at Lausanne as I come back, that I may pass a few hours the more with you. Besides, I want to consult you with regard to many particulars, which it is proper to communicate beforehand, that you may have time to consider them before you give me your opinion.

I would not explain my scheme to you in relation to the young man, till his presence had confirmed the good opinion I had conceived of him. I think I may now depend upon him sufficiently to acquaint you, between ourselves, that my design is to intrust him with the education of my children. I am not ignorant that those important concerns are the principal duty of a parent; but when it will be time to exert them, I shall be too old to discharge them; and
being

being calm and speculative by constitution, I should never have been sufficiently active to govern the spirit of youth. Besides, for a reason you know *, Julia would be concerned to see me assume an office, in which I should never acquit myself to her liking. I have a thousand reasons besides ; your sex is not equal to these duties ; their mother shall confine herself to the education of her Harriot ; to your share I allot the management of the household upon the plan already established, and of which you approve ; and it shall be my business to behold three worthy people concurring to promote the happiness of the family, and to enjoy that repose in my old age, for which I shall be indebted to their labours.

I have always found, that my wife was extremely averse from trusting her children to the care of mercenaries, and I could not disapprove of her scruples. The respectable capacity of a preceptor requires so many talents which are not to be paid for, so many virtues which have no price set upon them, that it is in vain to think of procuring one by means of money. It is from a man of genius only that we can expect the talents of a preceptor ; it is from the heart of an affectionate friend alone that we can hope to meet with the zeal of a parent ; and genius is not to be sold any more than attachment.

In your friend all the requisite qualities seem to be united ; and if I am well acquainted with

F 3

his

* The reader is not yet acquainted with this reason ; but he is desired not to be impatient.

his disposition, I do not think he would desire greater happiness, than to make those beloved children contribute to their mother's felicity. The only obstacle I can foresee is his affection to Lord B——, which will not allow him to disengage himself from so dear a friend, to whom he has such great obligations, at least if his Lordship does not require it himself. We expect to see this extraordinary man very soon; and as you have a great ascendancy over him, if he answers the idea you have given me of him, I may commit the business to your management, so far as relates to him.

You have now, my dear cousin, the clue of my whole conduct, which, without this explanation, must have appeared very extraordinary, and which, I hope, will hereafter meet with Julia's approbation and yours. The advantage of having such a wife as I have, made me try many expedients which would have been impracticable with another. Though I leave her, in full confidence, with her old lover, under no other guard than her own virtue, it would be madness to establish that lover in my family, before I was certain that he ceased to be such; and how could I be assured of it, if I had a wife on whom I had less dependence?

I have often observed you smile at my remarks on love; but now I think I can mortify you. I have made a discovery which neither you nor any other women, with all the subtlety they attribute to your sex, would ever have made; the proof of which you will nevertheless perceive at first sight, and you will allow it to be equal to demonstration, when I explain to
you

you the principles on which I ground it. Was I to tell you that my young couple are more fond than ever, this undoubtedly would not appear wonderful to you. Was I to assure you, on the contrary, that they are perfectly cured; you know the power of reason and virtue, and therefore you would not look upon that neither as a great miracle: but if I tell you, that both these opposites are true at the same time; that they love each other with more ardour than ever, and that nothing subsists between them but a virtuous attachment; that they are always lovers, and yet never more than friends; this, I imagine, is what you would least expect, what you will have more difficulty to conceive, and what nevertheless precisely corresponds with truth.

This is the riddle, which makes those frequent contradictions, which you must have observed in them, both in their conversation and in their letters. What you wrote to Julia concerning the picture, has served more than any thing to explain the mystery; and I find that they are always sincere, even in contradicting themselves continually. When I say they, I speak particularly of the young man; for as to your friend, one can only speak of her by conjecture. A vail of wisdom and honour makes so many folds about her heart, that it is impenetrable to human eyes, even to her own. The only circumstance which leads me to imagine that she has still some distrust to overcome, is, that she is continually considering with herself what she should do if she was perfectly cured; and she examines herself with so much accuracy,

cy, that if she was really cured, she would not do it so well.

As to your friend, who, though virtuously inclined, is less apprehensive of his present feelings, I find that he still retains all the affections of his youth; but I perceive them without having any reason to be offended at them. It is not Julia Wolmar he is fond of, but Julia E-tange; he does not hate me as the possessor of the object I love, but as the ravisher of her whom he doated on. His friend's wife is not his mistress, the mother of two children is not her who was formerly his scholar. It is true she is very like that person, and often puts him in mind of her. He loves her in the time past. This is the true explanation of the riddle. Deprive him of his memory, and you destroy his love.

This is not an idle subtlety, my pretty cousin, but a solid observation, which, if extended to other affections, may admit of a more general application than one would imagine. I even think that it would not be difficult to explain it by your own ideas. At the time you parted the two lovers, their passion was at the highest degree of impetuosity. Perhaps, if they had continued much longer together, they would gradually have grown cool; but their imagination, being strongly affected, constantly presented each to the other in the light in which they appeared at the time of their separation. The young man, not perceiving those alterations which the progress of time made in his mistress, loved her such as he had seen her formerly, not such

such as she was then *. To complete his happiness, it would not have been enough to have given him possession of her, unless she could have been given to him at the same age, and under the same circumstances she was in, when their loves commenced. The least alteration in these particulars would have lessened so much of the felicity he proposed to himself; she is grown handsomer, but she is altered; her improvement, in that sense, turns her prejudice; for it is of his former mistress, not of any other, that he is enamoured.

The error which deceives him, is, that he confounds the times, and often reproaches himself on account of a passion which he thinks present, but which is nothing more than the effect of too tender a recollection. I do not know, however, whether it will not be better to accomplish his cure, than to undeceive him. More advantage perhaps may be drawn from his mistake, than from his better judgment. To discover to him the true state of his affections, would be to apprize him of the death of the object he loved; this might be an affliction dangerous

* You women are very ridiculous to think of rendering such a frivolous and fluctuating passion as that of love consistent. Every thing in nature is changeable, every thing is in continual fluctuation; and yet you would inspire a constant passion; And what right have you to pretend that we must love you for ever, because we loved you yesterday? Then preserve the same face, the same age, the same humour; be always the same, and we will always love you, if we can. But when you alter continually, and require us always to love you, it is in fact desiring us every minute not to love you; it is not seeking for constant minds, but looking out for such as are fickle as your own.

gerous to him, inasmuch as a state of melancholy is always favourable to love.

Delivered from the scruples which restrain him, he would perhaps be more apt to indulge recollections which he ought to stifle; he would converse with less reserve, and the traces of Julia are not so effaced in Mrs Wolmar, but upon examination he might find them again. I have thought, that instead of undeceiving him with respect to his opinion of the progress he has made, and which encourages him to pursue it to the end, we should rather endeavour to banish the remembrance of those times which he ought to forget, by skilfully substituting other ideas in the room of those he is so fond of. You, who contributed to give them birth, may contribute more than any one to efface them: but I shall wait till we are all together, that I may tell you in your ear what you shall do for this purpose; a charge which, if I am not mistaken, will not be very burdensome to me. In the mean time, I endeavour to make the objects of his dread familiar to him, by presenting them to him in such a manner, that he may no longer think them dangerous. He is impetuous, but tractable and easily managed. I avail myself of this advantage to give a turn to his imagination. In the room of his mistress, I compel him always to look at the wife of his friend, and the mother of my children; I efface one picture by another, and hide the past with the present. We always ride a startlish horse up to the object which frights him, that he may not be frightened at it again. We should act in the same manner with those young people,
whose

whose imaginations are on fire even after their affections are grown cold, and whose fancy presents monsters at a distance, which disappear as they approach.

I flatter myself that I am well acquainted with the strength of both, and that I do not expose them to a trial which they cannot support: for wisdom does not consist in using all kinds of precautions indiscriminately; but in chusing those which are really useful, and in neglecting such as are superfluous. The eight days, during which I leave them together, will perhaps be sufficient for them to discover the true state of their minds, and to know in what relation they really stand to each other. The oftner they perceive themselves in private with each other, the sooner they will find out their mistake, by comparing their present sensations with those they felt formerly when they were in the same situation. Besides, it is of importance that they should accustom themselves to endure, without danger, that state of familiarity in which they must necessarily live together if my scheme takes place. I find by Julia's conduct, that you have given her advice, which she could not refuse taking without wronging herself. What pleasure I should take in giving her this proof that I am sensible of her real worth, if she was a woman with whom a husband might make a merit of such confidence! But if she gains nothing over her affections, her virtue will still remain the same; it will cost her dearer, and she will not triumph the less. Whereas, if she is still in danger of feeling any inward uneasiness, it can arise only from some moving conversation,
which

which she must be too sensible beforehand will awaken recollection, and which she will therefore always avoid. Thus you see, my conduct in this instance must not be judged of by common maxims, but from the motives which actuate me, and from the singular disposition of her who is the object of my concern.

Farewell, my dear cousin, till my return. Though I have not entered into these explanations with Julia, I do not desire you to keep them secret from her. It is a maxim with me, never to make secrets among my friends; therefore I commit these to your discretion; make such use of them as your prudence and friendship will direct. I know you will do nothing, but what is best and most proper.

L E T T E R CXXXIV.

To Lord B——.

MR Wolmar set out yesterday for Etange, and you can scarce conceive in what a melancholy state his departure has left me. I think the absence of his wife would not have affected me so much as his. I find myself under greater restraint, than even when he is present; a mournful silence takes possession of my heart; its murmurs are stifled by a secret dread; and, being less tormented with desires than apprehensions, I experience all the horrors of guilt, without being exposed to the temptations of it.

Can you imagine, my Lord, where my mind gains confidence, and loses these unworthy fears?

In

In the presence of Mrs Wolmar. As soon as I approach her, the sight of her pacifies my inquietude ; her looks purify my heart. Such is the ascendancy of her's, that it always seems to inspire others with a sense of her innocence, and to confer that composure which is the effect of it. Unluckily for me, her system of life does not allow her to devote the whole day to the society of her friends ; and in those moments which I am obliged to pass out of her company, I should suffer less if I was farther distant from her.

What contributes to feed the melancholy with which I am oppressed, is a reflection which she made yesterday after her husband's departure. Though till that moment she kept up her spirits tolerably, yet for a long time her eyes followed him with an air of tenderness, which I then imagined was only occasioned by the departure of that happy husband ; but I found by her conversation, that the emotion was to be imputed to another cause, which was a secret to me. You see, said she, in what manner we live together, and you may judge whether he is dear to me. Do not imagine, however, that the sentiment which attaches me to him, though as tender and as powerful as that of love, is likewise susceptible of its weakness. If an interruption of the agreeable habit of living together is painful to us, we are consoled by the firm hope of resuming the same habit again. A state of such permanence admits few vicissitudes which we have reason to dread ; and in an absence of a few days, the pain of so short an interval does not affect me so strongly, as the

pleasure of seeing an end to it. The affliction, which you read in my eyes, proceeds from a more weighty cause; and though it is relative to Mr Wolmar, it is not his departure which occasions it.

My dear friend, continued she, with an affecting tone, there is no true happiness on earth. My husband is one of the most worthy and affectionate of men; the duty which incites us is cemented by mutual inclination; he has no desires but mine; I have children which give, and promise pleasure hereafter to their mother; there cannot be a more affectionate, virtuous, and amiable friend, than her whom my heart doats on, and with whom I shall pass my days; you yourself contribute to my felicity, by having so well justified my esteem and affection for you; a long and expensive law-suit, which is nearly finished, will soon bring the best of fathers to my arms; every thing prospers with us; peace and order reign throughout the family; our servants are zealous and faithful, our neighbours express every kind of attachment to us, we enjoy the good-will of the public. Blest with every thing which heaven, fortune, and men can bestow, all things conspire to my happiness. A secret uneasiness, one trouble only, poisons all, and I am not happy. She uttered these last words with a sigh, which pierced my soul, and which I had no share in raising. She is not happy, said I, sighing in my turn, and I am no longer an obstacle to her felicity!

That melancholy thought disordered my ideas in a moment, and disturbed the repose which I began to taste. Unable to endure the intolerable

able state of doubt into which her conversation had thrown me, I importuned her so eagerly to disclose her whole mind to me, that at length she deposited the fatal secret with me, and allows me to communicate it to you. But this is the hour of recreation, Mrs Wolmar is come out of the nursery to walk with her children, she has just told me as much. I attend her, my Lord ; I leave you for the present ; and shall resume, in my next, the subject I am now obliged to quit.

L E T T E R CXXXV.

Mrs WOLMAR to her Husband.

I EXPECT you next Tuesday according to your appointment, and you will find every thing disposed agreeable to your desire. Call on Mrs Orbe in your way back ; she will tell you what has passed during your absence ; I had rather you should learn it from her than from me.

I flattered myself, Mr Wolmar, that I had deserved your esteem ; but your conduct is not the most prudent, and you sport most cruelly with your wife's virtue.

L E T T E R CXXXVI.

To Lord B——.

I MUST give you an account, my Lord, of a danger we have incurred within these few

days, and from whence we are happily delivered at the expence of a little terror and fatigue. This relation very well deserves a letter by itself; when you read it, you will perceive the motives which engage me to write.

You know that Mrs Wolmar's house is not far from the lake, and that she is fond of the water. It is three days since her husband's absence has left us without employment; and the pleasantness of the evening made us form a scheme for one of these parties the next day. Soon as the sun was up we went to the river's side; we took a boat with nets for fishing, three rowers, and a servant, and we embarked with some provisions for dinner. I took a fowling-piece to knock down some pefolets *; but was ashamed to kill birds out of wantonness, and only for the pleasure of doing mischief. I amused myself therefore in observing the siflets, the crenets §, and I fired but once at a grebe, at a great distance, which I missed.

We passed an hour or two in fishing within 500 paces of the shore. We had good success, but Julia had them all thrown into the water again, except a trout which had received a blow from the oar. The animals, said she, are in pain; let us deliver them; let us enjoy the pleasure they will feel on escaping from danger. This operation, however, was performed slowly, and against the grain, not without some representation.

* A bird of passage on the lake of Geneva, which is not good to eat.

§ Different sorts of birds on the lake of Geneva, and very good to eat.

sentations against it ; and I found that our gentry would have had a much better relish for the fish they had caught, than for the moral which saved their lives.

We then launched farther into the lake; soon after, with all the vivacity of a young man, which it is time for me to check, undertaking to manage the master-oar, I rowed the boat into the middle of the lake, so that we were soon above a league from shore. Then I explained to Julia, every part of that superb horizon which environed us. I shewed her at a distance the mouth of the Rhone, whose impetuous current stops on a sudden within a quarter of a league, as if it was afraid to sully the chrystal azure of the lake with its muddy waters. I made her observe the redans of the mountains, whose correspondent angles running parallel, formed a bed in the space between fit to receive the river which occupied it. As we got farther from shore, I had great pleasure in making her take notice of the rich and delightful banks of the *Pays de Vaud*, where the vast number of towns, the prodigious throng of people, with the beautiful and verdant hills all around, formed a most ravishing landscape; where every spot of ground, being cultivated and equally fertile, supplies the husbandman, the shepherd, and the vine-dresser, with the certain fruits of their labours, which are not devoured by the greedy publican. Afterwards I pointed out *Chablais*, a country not less favoured by nature, and which nevertheless affords nothing but a spectacle of wretchedness; I made her perceive the manifest distinction between the different effects of the two governments,

ments, with respect to the riches, number, and happiness, of the inhabitants. It is thus, said I, that the earth expands her fruitful bosom, and lavishes treasures among those happy people who cultivate it for themselves. She seems to smile and be enlivened at the sweet aspect of liberty; she loves to nourish mankind. On the contrary, the mournful ruins, the heath and brambles which cover a half desert country, proclaim from afar that it is under the dominion of an absent proprietor, and that it yields with reluctance a scanty produce to slaves who reap no advantage from it.

While we were agreeably amusing ourselves with viewing the neighbouring coasts, a gale arising, which drove us assant towards the opposite shore, began to blow very high, and when we thought to tack about, the resistance was so strong that it was impossible for our slight boat to overcome it. The waves soon began to grow dreadful; we endeavoured to make for the coast of Savoy, and tried to land at the village of Meillerie, which was over-against us, and the only place almost where the shore affords a convenient landing. But the wind changing, and blowing stronger, rendered all the endeavours of the watermen ineffectual, and discovered to us a range of steep rocks somewhat lower, where there was no shelter.

We all tugged at our oars; and at that instant I had the mortification to perceive Julia grow sick, and see her weak and fainting at the bottom of the boat. Happily she had been used to the water, and her sickness was not of long duration. In the mean time, our efforts increa-
sed

fed with our danger ; the heat of the sun, the fatigue, and profuse sweating, took away our breaths, and made us excessively faint. Then summoning all her courage, Julia revived our spirits by her compassionate kindness ; she wiped the sweat from off our faces ; and mixing some wine and water, for fear of intoxication, she presented it alternately to those who were most exhausted. No, your lovely friend never appeared with such lustre as at that moment, when the heat and the agitation of her spirits gave an additional glow to her complexion ; and what greatly improved her charms, was, that you might plainly perceive, by the tenderness of her behaviour, that her solicitude proceeded less from apprehensions for herself than compassion for us. At one time two planks having started by a shock which dipt us all, she concluded that the boat was 'split, and in the exclamation of that affectionate mother, I heard these words distinctly : O my children, must I never see you more ! As for myself, whose imagination always exceeds the danger, though I knew the utmost of our perilous condition, yet I expected every minute to see the boat swallowed up, that delicate beauty struggling in the midst of the waves, and the roses upon her cheeks chilled by the cold hand of death.

At length, by dint of labour we reached Meillerie ; and after having struggled above an hour within ten paces of the shore, we at last effected a landing. Which done, all our fatigues were forgotten. Julia took upon herself to recompense the trouble which every one had taken ; and as in the height of danger her concern

cern was for us, she seemed now on shore to imagine that we had saved nobody but her.

We dined with that appetite which is the gift of hard labour. The trout was served up: Julia, who was extremely fond of it, eat but little; and I perceived, that to make the watermen amends for the regret which the late sacrifice cost them, she did not chuse that I should eat much myself. My Lord, you have observed a thousand times that her amiable disposition is to be seen in trifles as well as in matters of consequence.

After dinner, the water being still rough, and the boat wanting to be refitted, I proposed taking a walk. Julia objected to the wind and sun, and took notice of my being fatigued. I had my views, and obviated all her objections. I have been accustomed, said I, to violent exercise from my infancy: far from hurting my health, they strengthen my constitution; and my late voyage has made me still more robust. As to the sun and wind, you have your straw hat, and we will get under the wind and in the woods; we need only climb among the rocks, and you who are not fond of a flat, will willingly bear the fatigue. She consented, and we set out while our people were at dinner.

You know, that when I was banished from Valais, I came, about ten years ago, to Meillerie, to wait for leave to return. It was there I passed those melancholy but pleasing days, solely intent upon her; and it was from thence I wrote her that letter, with which she was so greatly affected. I always wished to re-visit that lovely retreat, which served me as an asylum in the
midst

midst of ice, and where my heart loved to converse, in idea, with the dearest object. An opportunity of visiting this beloved spot in a more agreeable season, and in company with her whose image formerly dwelt there with me, was the secret motive of my walk. I took a pleasure in pointing out to her those old memorials of a passion so constant and so unfortunate.

We got thither after an hour's walk through cool and winding paths, which ascending insensibly between the trees and the rocks, were no otherwise inconvenient than by being tedious. As we drew near, and I recollected former tokens, I found myself a little disordered; but I overcame it, I concealed my uneasiness, and we reached the place. This solitary spot formed a wild and desert nook, but full of those sorts of beauties which are only agreeable to susceptible minds, and appear horrible to others. A torrent, occasioned by the melting of the snow, rolled in a muddy stream within twenty paces of us, and carried dirt, sand, and stones along with it, not without considerable noise. Behind us, a chain of inaccessible rocks divided the place where we stood from that part of the Alps which they call the Ice-houses, because from the beginning of the world they have been covered with vast mountains of ice, which are continually increasing *. Forests of gloomy fir-trees afforded us a melancholy shade on the right. On the

* These mountains are so high, that half an hour after sunset, its rays still gild the tops of them, and the reflection of red on those white summits, forms a beautiful roseate colour, which may be perceived at a great distance.

the left was a large wood of oak, beyond which the torrent issued, and beneath, that vast body of water, which the lake forms in the bay of the Alps, parted us from the rich coast of the *Pays de Vaud*, crowning the whole landscape with the top of the majestic Jura.

In the midst of these noble and superb objects, the little spot where we were displayed all the charms of an agreeable and rural retreat; small floods of water filtered through the rocks, and flowed along the verdure in chrystal streams. Some wild fruit-trees leaned their heads over ours; the cool and moist earth was covered with grass and flowers. Comparing this agreeable retreat with the objects which surrounded us, one would have thought that this desert spot was designed as an asylum for two lovers, who alone had escaped the general wreck of nature.

When we had reached this corner, and I had attentively examined it for some time, Now, said I to Julia, looking at her with eyes swimming in tears, is your heart perfectly still in this place, and do you feel no secret emotion at the sight of a spot which is full of you? Immediately, without waiting for her answer, I led her towards the rock, and shewed her where her cypher was engraved in a thousand places, with several verses in Petrarch and Tasso relative to the state I was in when I engraved them. On seeing them again at such a distance of time, I found how powerfully the review of these objects renewed my former violent sensations. I addressed her with some degree of impetuosity: O Julia, the everlasting delight of my soul! this is the spot, where the most constant lover in the world formerly

merly sighed for thee. This is the retreat, where thy beloved image made all the scene of his felicity, and prepared him for that happiness which you yourself afterwards dispensed. No fruit or shade were then to be found here: these compartments were not then furnished with verdure or flowers; the course of these streams did not then make these separations, these birds did not chirp then, the voracious spar-hawk, the dismal crow, and the dreadful eagle alone made these caverns echo with their cries; huge lumps of ice hung from these rocks; festoons of snow were all the ornaments which bedecked these trees; every thing here bore marks of the rigour of winter and hoary frost; the ardour of my affection alone made this place supportable, and I spent whole days here wrapt in thought of thee. Here is the stone where I used to sit, to reflect on your happy abode at a distance; on this I penned that letter which moved your heart; these sharp flints served me as graving tools to cut out your name; here I crossed that frozen torrent to regain one of your letters which the wind carried off; there I came to review, and give a thousand kisses to the last you ever wrote to me; here is the brink where, with a gloomy and greedy eye, I measured the depth of this abyss: in short, it was here that, before my sad departure, I came to bewail you as dead, and swore never to survive you. O thou lovely fair one, too constantly adored, thou for whom alone I was born! must I revisit this spot with you by my side, and must I regret the time I spent here in bewailing your absence? . . . I was proceeding further; but Julia perceiving me draw near
the

the brink, was affrighted, and seizing my hand, pressed it, without speaking a word, looked tenderly upon me, and could scarce suppress a rising sigh; soon after turning from me and taking me by the arm, Let us be gone, my friend, said she, with a tone of emotion, the air of this place is not good for me. I went with her sighing, but without making her any answer; and I quitted that melancholy spot for ever, with as much regret as I would have taken leave of Julia herself.

We came back gently to the harbour after some little wandering, and parted. She chose to be alone, and I continued walking without knowing whither I went. At my return, the boat not being yet ready, nor the water smooth, we made a melancholy supper, with downcast eyes, and pensive looks, eating little, and talking still less. After supper, we sat on the strand, waiting an opportunity to go off. The moon shone on a sudden, the water became smoother, and Julia proposed our departure. I handed her into the boat, and when I sat down by her, I never thought of quitting her hand. We kept a profound silence. The equal and measured sound of the oars threw me into a reverie. The lively chirping of the snipes, recalling to my mind the pleasures of a past period, made me dull. By degrees I found the melancholy which oppressed me increase. A serene sky, the mild reflection of the moon, the silver froth of the water which sparkled around us, the concurrence of agreeable sensations, even the presence of the beloved object herself, could not banish bitter reflections from my mind.

I be-

I began with recollecting a walk of the same kind which we took together, during the rapture of our early loves. All the pleasing sensations which then affected me, were present to my mind to torment me the more; all the adventures of our youth, our studies, our entertainments, our letters, our assignations, our pleasures,

*E tanta fede, e sì dolci memorie,
E sì lungo costume !*

Our constant vows, memorials sweet!
Which love so often prompted to repeat.

A crowd of objects, which recalled the image of my past happiness, all pressed upon me and rushed into my memory, to increase my present wretchedness. It is past, said I to myself, those times, those happy times will be no more; they are gone for ever! Alas! they will never return; and yet we live, and we are together, and our hearts are still united! I seemed as if I could have endured her death or her absence with more patience; and thought that I had suffered less all the time I was parted from her. When I bewailed her at a distance, the hope of seeing her again was comfort to my soul; I flattered myself that the sight of her would banish all my sorrows in an instant, at least I could conceive it possible to be in a more cruel situation than my own. But to be by her side; to see her, to touch her, to talk to her, to love her, to adore her, and, whilst I almost enjoyed her again, to find her lost to me for ever; this was what threw me into such fits of fury and rage, as by degrees agitated me even to despair. My mind

soon began to conceive deadly projects, and in a transport, which I yet tremble to think of, I was violently tempted to throw her with myself into the waves, and there to end in her arms my days and tedious torments. This horrid temptation grew so strong at last, that I was obliged suddenly to quit her hand and walk to the other end of the boat.

There my lively emotions began to take another turn; a more gentle sensation by degrees stole upon my mind, and tenderness overcame despair: I began to shed floods of tears; and that condition, compared to the state I had just been in, was not unattended with pleasure. I wept heartily for a long time, and found myself easier. When I was tolerably composed, I returned to Julia, and took her by the hand again. She held her handkerchief in her hand, which I found wet. Ah! said I to her softly, I find that our hearts have not ceased to sympathise! True, said she, in a broken accent, but may it be the last time they ever correspond in this manner! We then began to talk about indifferent matters; and after an hour's rowing, we arrived without any other accident. When we came in, I perceived that her eyes were red and much swelled; and she must have discovered that mine were not in a better condition. After the fatigue of this day, she stood in great need of rest: she withdrew, and I went to bed.

Such, my friend, is the journal of the day, in which, without exception, I experienced the most lively emotions I ever felt. I hope they will prove a crisis, which will entirely restore me to myself. Moreover, I must tell you that
this

this adventure has convinced me, more than all the power of argument, of the free-will of man, and the merit of virtue. How many people yield to weak temptations? As for Julia, my eyes beheld, and my heart felt her emotions: she underwent the most violent struggle that day that ever human nature sustained; nevertheless, she conquered. O, my Lord, when, seduced by your mistress, you had power at once to triumph over her desires and your own, was you not more than man? But for your example, I had perhaps been lost. A hundred times in that perilous day, did the recollection of your virtue renew and strengthen mine.

LETTER CXXXV.*

From Lord B——.

ROUSE yourself, my friend, and emerge from childhood. Let not your reason slumber to the end of your life. The hours glide imperceptibly away, and it is now high time for you to grow wise. At thirty years of age surely a man should begin to reflect. Reflect, therefore, and be a man for once before your death.

My dear friend, your heart has long imposed on your understanding. You strove to philosophise before you were capable of it: you mistook your feelings for reason; and by estimating

H 2

things

* This letter appears to have been written before the receipt of the preceding.

things from the impressions they made on you, you have always continued ignorant of their real value. A good heart, I will own, is indispensibly necessary to the knowledge of truth: he who feels nothing can learn nothing; he may float from error to error in a sea of scepticism, but his discoveries will be vain, and his information fruitless, being ignorant of the relation of things to man, on which all true science depends. It were to stop half-way, however, in our pursuits after knowledge, not to inquire also into the relation of things to each other, in order to be better able to judge of their connection with ourselves. It is of little importance to know the nature and operation of our passions, if we know not at the same time how to judge of and estimate their objects; and this latter knowledge is to be attained only in the calm retreats of meditation.

The youth of the philosopher is the time for experiment, his passions being the instrument of his inquiries; but after having applied himself long enough to the perception of external objects, he retires within himself to consider, to compare, to know them. To this task you ought to apply yourself sooner than any other person in the world. All the pleasures and pains, of which a susceptible mind is capable, you have felt; all that a man can see, you have seen. In the space of twelve years you have exhausted all those sensations which might have served you during a long life, and have acquired even in youth the extensive experience of age. The first observations you were led to make, were on simple unpolished villagers, on persons almost such

as they came out of the hand of nature; just as if they had been presented to you for the groundwork of your piece, or as proper objects by which to compare every other. Banished next to the metropolis of one of the most celebrated people in the universe, you leaped, as one may say, from one extremity to the other, your genius supplying all the intermediate degrees. Then visiting the only nation of *men*, which remains among the various herds that are scattered over the face of the earth, you had an opportunity of seeing a well-governed society, or at least a society under a good government; you had there an opportunity of observing how far the public voice is the foundation of liberty. You have travelled through all climates, and have visited all countries beneath the sun. Add to this a sight still more worthy admiration, that which you enjoy in the presence of a sublime and refined soul, triumphant over its passions, and ruling over itself. The first object of your affections is that which is now daily before you; your admiration of which is but the better founded for your having seen and contemplated so many others. There is now nothing more worth your attention or concern. The only object of your future contemplation, should be yourself; that of your future enjoyment, the fruits of your knowledge. You have lived enough for this life; think now of living for that which is to last for ever.

Your passions, by which you were so long enslaved, did not deprive you of your virtue. This is all your boast, and doubtless you have reason to glory in it; yet be not too proud.

Your very fortitude is the effect of your weakness. Do you know how it came that you grew enamoured of virtue? It was because virtue always appeared to your imagination in the amiable form of that lovely woman, by whom she is so truly represented, and whose image you will always adore. But will you never love her for her own sake? Will you never, like Julia, court virtue of your own accord? Vain and indolent enthusiast! will you content yourself with barely admiring her virtues, without attempting to imitate them? You speak, in rapture, of the manner in which she discharges the important duties of wife and mother; but when will you discharge those of a man and a friend, by her example? Shall a woman be able to triumph over herself, and a philosopher find it so difficult to conquer of his passions? Will you continue to be always a mere prater, like the rest of them; and be content to write good books, instead of doing good actions *? Take care,

* Not that this philosophical age has not produced one true philosopher. I know one, I must confess, and but one; but the happiest circumstance is, that he resides in my native country. Shall I venture publicly to name him, whose honour it is to have remained unknown? Yes, learned and modest Abdusit, let your sublime simplicity forgive my zeal, which, to say truth, hath not your name for its object. No, it is not you I would make known in an age unworthy to admire you; it is Geneva I would honour, by making it known as the place of your residence. It is my fellow-citizens who are honoured by your presence. Happy the country, where the merit that conceals itself, is by so much the more esteemed. Happy the people, among whom presumptuous and forward youth is ashamed of its dogmatic insolence, and blushes at its vain knowledge before the learned ignorance of age. Venerable and virtuous old man! you have never been praised by
bab-

care, my friend; I still perceive an air of softness and effeminacy in your writing, which displeases me, as I think it rather the effect of an unextinguished passion than peculiar to your character. I hate imbecility in any one, and cannot bear the thoughts of it in my friend. There is no such thing as virtue without fortitude, and pusillanimity is the certain attendant on vice. How dare you rely on your own strength, who have no courage? Unhappy man! were Julia as weak as you, the very first opportunity would debase you into a vile adulterer. While you remain alone with her, therefore, learn to know her worth, and blush at your own demerit.

I am in hopes of seeing you soon at Clarendon: you know the motives of my desiring to see Italy again. Twelve years of mistakes and troubles have rendered me suspicious of myself: to resist my inclinations, however, my own abilities might suffice; but to give the preference of one to the other, to know which I should indulge, requires the assistance of a friend; nor shall I take less pleasure in being obliged to him on this occasion, than I have done in obliging him on others. Between friends, their obligations, as well as their affections, should be reciprocal. Do not deceive yourself, however; before I put any confidence in you, I shall inquire whether you are worthy of it, and if you de-

babbling wits; no noisy academician has written your eulogium. Instead of depositing all your wisdom in books, you have displayed it in your life, as an example to the country you have deigned to make the object of your esteem. You have lived like Socrates; but he died by the hands of his fellow-citizens, while you are cherished by yours.

deserve to return me the services you have formerly received. I know your heart, and am satisfied with its integrity: but this is not enough; it is your judgment I shall have occasion for, to direct me in making a choice which should be governed entirely by reason, and in which mine may be partial. I am not apprehensive of those passions, which, making open war upon us, give us warning to put ourselves upon our defence, and, whatever be their effect, leave us still conscious of our errors. We cannot so properly be said to be overcome by these, as to give way to them. I am more fearful of delusion than constraint, and of being involuntarily induced to do what my reason condemns. We have no need of foreign assistance to suppress our inclinations; but the assistance of a friend may be necessary to point out which it is most prudent to indulge: in this case it is that the friendship of a wise man may be useful, by his viewing, in a different light, those objects with which it is our interest to be intimately acquainted. Examine yourself, therefore, and tell me whether, vainly repining at your fate, you will continue for ever useless to yourself and others, or if, resuming the command over yourself, you will at last become capable of advising and assisting your friend.

My affairs will not detain me in London more than a fortnight longer, when I shall set out for our army in Flanders, where I intend to stay about the same time; so that you must not expect to see me before the end of next month or the beginning of October. In the mean time, write no more to me at London, but direct your
let-

letters to the army, agreeable to the inclosed address. When you write, proceed also in your descriptions ; for notwithstanding the censure I pass on your letters, they both affect and instruct me, giving me, at the same time, the most flattering ideas of a life of peace and retirement, agreeable to my temper and age. Above all, I charge you to ease my mind of the disquietude you have excited concerning Mrs Wolmar. If she be dissatisfied, who on earth can hope for happiness ? After the relation you have given me, I cannot conceive what can be wanting to complete her felicity.

L E T T E R CXXXVI.

To Lord B——.

YES, my Lord, I can with transport assure you, the affair of Meillerie was the crisis of my folly and misfortunes. My conversation with Mr Wolmar made me perfectly acquainted with the true state of my heart. That heart, too weak I confess, is nevertheless cured of its passion as much as it possibly can be ; and I prefer my present state of silent regret to that of being perpetually fearful of falling into guilt. Since the return of this worthy friend, I no longer hesitate to give him that title which you have rendered so valuable. It is the least I can bestow on every one who assists me in returning to the paths of virtue. My heart is now become as peaceful as the mansion I inhabit. I begin to be at ease in my residence ; to live as if I was at home ;
and

and, if I do not take upon me altogether the tone and authority of master, I feel yet a greater pleasure in supposing myself a brother of the family. There is something so delightful in the simplicity and equality which reign in this retirement, that I cannot help being affected with tenderness and respect. Thus I spend my days in tranquillity, amidst practical philosophy and susceptible virtue. In company with this happy couple, their situation insensibly affects me, and raises my heart by degrees into unison with theirs.

What a delightful retreat! What a charming habitation! A continuance in this place renders it even yet more delightful; and though it appear not very striking at first sight, it is impossible not to be pleased with it, when it is once known. The pleasure Mrs Wolmar takes in discharging the noblest duties, in making all who approach her virtuous and happy, communicates itself to all those who are the objects of her care, to her husband, her children, her guests, her domestics. No tumultuous scenes of noisy mirth, no loud peals of laughter, are heard in this peaceful mansion; but, in their stead, you always meet with contented hearts and chearful countenances. If at any time a tear is shed, it is the tear of sensibility and joy. Troubles, cares, and sorrow intrude not here, any more than vice and remorse, of which they are the fruits.

As to Julia, it is certain that, excepting the secret cause of uneasiness with which I acquainted you in my last *, every thing conspires to
make

* The letter here alluded to is not inserted in this collection; the reason of it will be seen hereafter.

make her happy. And yet, with so many reasons to be so, a thousand other women would think themselves miserable in the same situation. Her uniform and retired manner of living would be to them insupportable; they would think the noise of children intolerable; they would be fatigued to death with the care of their family; they would not be able to bear the country; the esteem and prudence of a husband not over-tender, would hardly recompense them for his indifference and age; his presence, and even his regard for them, would be burdensome. They would either find means to send him abroad, that they might live more at their liberty; or would leave him to himself; despising the peaceful pleasures of their situation, and seeking more dangerous ones elsewhere, they would never be at ease in their own house, unless when they came as visitors. It requires a sound mind to be able to enjoy the pleasures of retirement; the virtuous only being capable of amusing themselves with their family-concerns, and of voluntarily secluding themselves from the world: if there be on earth any such thing as happiness, they undoubtedly enjoy it in such a state. But the means of happiness are nothing to those who know not how to make use of them; and we never know in what true happiness consists, till we have acquired a taste for its enjoyment.

If I were desired to speak with precision, as to the reason why the inhabitants of this place are happy, I should think I could not answer with greater propriety than to say, it is because *they here know how to live*; not in the sense in which these words would be taken in France, where it
would

would be understood that they had adopted certain customs and manners in vogue: No; but they have adopted such manners as are most agreeable to human life, and the purposes for which man came into the world; to that life you mention, of which you have set me an example, which extends beyond itself, and is not given up for lost even in the hour of death.

Julia has a father who is anxious for the honour and interests of his family: she has children for whose subsistence it is necessary to provide. This ought to be the chief care of man in a state of society; and was therefore the first in which Julia and her husband united. When they began house-keeping, they examined into the state of their fortunes; not considering so much whether they were proportioned to their rank, as to their wants; and seeing they were sufficient for the provision of an honourable family, they had not so bad an opinion of their children, as to be fearful, lest the patrimony they had to leave would not content them. They applied themselves therefore rather to improve their present, than acquire a larger fortune: they placed their money rather safely than profitably; and, instead of purchasing new estates, set about increasing the value of that which they already had; leaving their own example in this point, as the only treasure by which they would desire to see the inheritance of their offspring increased.

It is true, that an estate which is not augmented, is liable to many accidents by which it will naturally diminish: but if this were a sufficient motive to begin increasing, when could it

it cease to be a pretext for a constant augmentation? Must it be divided among several children? Be it so: but must they be all idle? will not the industry of each be a supplement to his share? and ought it not to be considered in the partition? It is thus that insatiable avarice makes its way under the mask of prudence, and leads to vice under the pretext of only seeking its own security. It is in vain, says Mr Wolmar, to attempt to give to human affairs that stability which is not in their nature. Reason itself requires that we should leave many things to chance; and if our lives and fortunes depend so much on accident, what a folly is it to make ourselves really unhappy, in order to prevent doubtful evils, or avoid inevitable dangers? The only precaution he took was, to live one whole year on his principal, in order to have so much beforehand to receive of the interest, so that he had always the yearly product of his estate at command. He chose rather to diminish his capital, than to be perpetually under the necessity of dunning for his rents; the consequence of which has been in the end advantageous to him, as it prevented him from borrowing, and other ruinous expedients, to which many people are obliged to have recourse on every unforeseen accident. Thus good management supplies the place of parsimony, and he is in fact a gainer by what he has spent.

The master of this house possesses but a moderate fortune, according to the estimation of the world; but in reality I hardly know any body more opulent. There is indeed no such thing as absolute wealth: that term signifying

only the relation between the wants and possessions of those who are rich. One man is rich, though possessing only an acre of land ; another is a beggar in the midst of heaps of gold. Luxury and caprice have no bounds, and make more persons poor than real wants. But the proportion between their wants and their abilities of supplying them, is here established on a sure foundation, namely, the perfect harmony subsisting between the husband and wife : the former taking upon him the charge of collecting the rents and profits of his estate ; and the latter, that of regulating their expences ; and on this harmony their wealth depends.

What struck me most in this house at first, was, that there appeared so much ease, freedom, and gaiety, in the midst of order and diligence ; the great fault of well-regulated houses being, that they always wear an air of gloominess and restraint. The extreme solicitude also of the heads of the family looks too much like avarice. Every thing about them seems constrained ; and there appears something servile in their punctuality, which renders it intolerable. The domestics do their duty indeed ; but then they do it with an air of discontent and mistrust. The guests, it is true, are well received ; but they dare not make use of a freedom cautiously bestowed, and are always afraid of doing something that will be reckoned a breach of regularity. Such slavish fathers of families cannot be said to live for themselves, but for their children ; without considering that they are not only fathers but men, and that they ought to set
their

their children an example how to live prudent and happy.

More judicious maxims are adopted here. Mr Wolmar thinks one of the principal duties of a father of a family is to make his house, in the first place, agreeable, that his children may delight in their home; and that, seeing their father happy, they may be tempted to tread in his footsteps. Another of his maxims, and which he often repeats, is, that the gloomy and fordid lives of fathers and mothers are almost always the first cause of the ill conduct of children.

As to Julia, who never had any other guide, and who needed no better, than her own heart, she obeys, without scruple, its dictates; being then certain of doing right. Can a mind so susceptible as her's be insensible to pleasure? On the contrary, she delights in every amusement, nor refuses to join in any diversion that promises to be agreeable; but her pleasures are the pleasures of Julia. She neglects neither her own convenience, nor the satisfaction of those who are dear to her. She esteems nothing superfluous that may contribute to the happiness of a sensible mind; but censures every thing as such that serves only to make a figure in the eyes of others; so that you will find in this house all the gratifications which luxury and pleasure can bestow, without refinement or effeminacy. With respect to magnificence and pomp, you will see no more of it than she was obliged to submit to in order to please her father; her own taste, however, prevails even here, which consists in giving to every thing less brilliancy and shew,

than grace and elegance. When I talk to her of the methods which are daily invented at Paris and London to hang the coaches easier, she does not disapprove of that; but, when I tell her of the great expence they are at in the varnishing of them, she can hardly believe or comprehend me; and asks, if such fine varnish makes the coaches more commodious. Indeed she scruples not to say, that I exaggerate a good deal on the scandalous paintings with which they now adorn their equipages, instead of the coats of arms formerly used; as if it were more eligible to be known to the world for a man of licentious manners, than as a man of good family. But she was particularly shocked when I told her that the ladies had introduced, and kept up, this custom; and that their chariots were distinguishable from those of the gentlemen only, by paintings more lascivious and immodest. I was obliged to recount to her an expression of your noble friend's, on this subject, which she could hardly digest. I was with him one day to look at a vis-a-vis, which happened to be in this taste. But he no sooner cast his eye on the pannels than he turned away from it, telling the owner that he should offer carriages of that kind to wanton women of quality, for that no modest man could make use of them.

As the first step to virtue is to forbear doing ill, so the first step to happiness is to be free from pain. These two maxims, which, well understood, would render precepts of morality in a great degree useless, are favourite ones with Mrs Wolmar. She is extremely affected by the
mis-

misfortunes of others; and it would be as difficult for her to be happy with wretched objects about her, as it would be for an innocent man to preserve his virtue and live in the midst of vice. She has none of that barbarous pity, which is satisfied with turning away its eye from the miserable objects it might relieve. On the contrary, she makes it her business to seek out such objects: it is the existence, and not the presence, of the unhappy which gives her affliction. It is not sufficient for her to be ignorant that there are any such; it is necessary to her quiet that she should be assured there are none miserable; at least within her sphere of charity: for it would be unreasonable to extend her concern beyond her own neighbourhood, and to make her happiness depend upon the welfare of all mankind. She takes care to inform herself of the necessities of all that live near her, and interests herself in their relief as if their wants were her own. She knows every one personally; includes them all, as it were, in her family; and spares no pains to banish, or alleviate, the misfortunes and afflictions incident to human life.

I am desirous, my Lord, of profiting by your instructions; but you must forgive me a piece of enthusiasm, of which I am no longer ashamed, and with which you yourself are affected. There will never be another Julia in the world. Providence takes a particular interest in every thing that regards her, nor leaves any thing to the consequence of accident. Heaven seems to have sent her upon earth, to serve at once as an example of that excellence of which

human nature is capable, and of that happiness it may enjoy in the obscurity of private life, without having recourse either to those public virtues which sometimes raise humanity above itself, or to those honours with which the breath of popular applause rewards them. Her fault, if love be a fault, has served only to display her fortitude and virtue. Her relations, her friends, her servants, all happily situated, were formed to love her, and be beloved by her. Her country is the only one upon earth where she ought to have been born ; to be happy herself, it was necessary for her to live among a happy people. If, to her misfortune, she had been born among those unhappy wretches, who groan beneath a load of oppression, and struggle in vain against the iron hand of cruelty, every complaint of the oppressed had poisoned the sweets of her life ; the common ruin had been her's, and her benevolent heart had made her feel incessantly those evils she could not have redressed.

Instead of that, every thing here animates and supports the native goodness of her disposition. She has no public calamities to afflict her. She sees not around her the frightful pictures of indigence and despair. The villagers in easy circumstances, have more need of her advice than her bounty *. But, if there be found among them

* There is near Clarens a village called Moutrun, the right of common to which is sufficient to maintain the inhabitants, though they had not a foot of land of their own. For which reason, the freedom of that village is almost as difficult to be obtained as that of Berne. It is a great pity that some honest magistrate is not appointed to make these burghers a little more sociable, or their burghership less dear.

them an orphan too young to earn his subsistence; an obscure widow who pines in secret indigence; a childish father, whose hands, enfeebled by age, cannot supply him with the means of life; she is not afraid that her bounty will increase the public charge, by encouraging idleness or knavery. The happiness she herself feels, multiplies and extends itself to all around her. Every house she enters soon becomes a copy of her own: nor are convenience and order only pursued from her example, but harmony and goodness become equally the objects of domestic management. When she goes abroad, she sees none but agreeable objects about her; and when she returns home, she is saluted by others still more engaging. Her heart is delighted by every prospect that meets her eyes; and little susceptible as it is of self-love, it is led to love itself in the effects of its own benevolence. No, my Lord, I repeat it again; nothing that regards Julia can be indifferent to the cause of virtue. Her charms, her talents, her taste, her conflicts, her errors, her afflictions, her abode, her friends, her family, her pains, her pleasures, every thing, in short, that compleats her destiny, compose a life without example; such as few women would chuse to imitate, and yet such as all, in spite of themselves, must admire.

What pleases me most, in the solicitude which prevails here regarding the happiness of others, is, that their benevolence is always exerted with prudence, and is never abused. We do not always succeed in our benevolent intentions; but, on the contrary, some people imagine

gine they are doing great services, who are, in reality, doing great injuries; and, with a view to a little manifest good, are guilty of much unforeseen evil. Mrs Wolmar indeed possesses, in an eminent degree, a qualification very rare, even among women of the best character; I mean, an exquisite discernment in the distribution of her favours, and that as well in the choice of means to render them really useful, as of the persons on whom they are bestowed. She has laid down certain rules for her conduct in this respect, from which she never deviates. She knows how to grant, or refuse, every thing that is asked of her, without betraying the least weakness in her compliance, or caprice in her denial. Whoever hath committed one infamous or wicked action, hath nothing to hope for from her but justice, and her pardon if he has offended her; but never that favour and protection, which she can bestow on a worthier object. I heard her once refuse a favour, which depended on herself only, to a man of this stamp. "I wish you happy," said she to him coldly, "but I shall not contribute any thing to make you so, lest I should put it in your power to injure others. There are too many honest people in the world, who require relief, for me to think of assisting you." It is true this piece of just severity cost her dear, and it is but seldom she has occasion to exercise it. Her maxim is, to look upon all those as deserving people, of whose demerits she is not fully convinced; and there are few persons weak and wicked enough not to evade the full proofs of their guilt. She has none of that indolent charity

riches of the wealthy, who give money to the miserable to be excused from attending to their distresses; and know how to answer their petitions only by giving alms. Her purse is not inexhaustible; and since she is become the mother of a family, she regulates it with more œconomy. Of all the kinds of relief we may afford to the unhappy, the giving alms is certainly that which costs us least trouble; but it is also the most transitory and least serviceable to the object relieved: Julia does not seek to get rid of such objects, but to be useful to them.

Neither does she grant her recommendation, or exert her good offices, without first knowing whether the use intended to be made of her interest be just and reasonable. Her protection is never refused to any one who really stands in need of and deserves to obtain it: but for those who desire to raise themselves through fickleness or ambition only, she can very seldom be prevailed upon to give herself any trouble. The natural business of man is to cultivate the earth, and subsist on its produce. The peaceful inhabitant of the country needs only to know in what happiness consists, to be happy. All the real pleasures of humanity are within his reach; he feels only those pains which are inseparable from it, and which to the man who seeks to remove, will only be changed for others more severe. His situation is the only necessary, the only useful one in life. He is never unhappy, but when others tyrannize over him, or seduce him by their vices. In agriculture and husbandry consists the real prosperity of a country, the greatness and strength which a people derive from

from themselves, that which depends not on other nations, which is not obliged to attack others for its own preservation, but is productive of the surest means of its own defence. In making an estimate of the strength of a nation, a superficial observer would visit the court, the prince, his posts, his troops, his magazines, and his fortified towns; but the true politician would take a survey of the country, and visit the cottages of the husbandmen. The former would only see what is already executed, but the latter what was capable of being put into execution.

On this principle they proceed here, and yet more so at Etange: they contribute as much as possible to make the peasants happy in their condition, without ever assisting them to change it. The better as well as the poorer sort of people are equally desirous of sending their children to the cities; the one, that they may study and become gentlemen; the others, that they may find employment, and so ease their parents of the charge of maintaining them. The young people, on their part, have curiosity, and are generally fond of roving: the girls aspire to the dress and finery of the citizens; and the boys, most of them, go into foreign service, thinking it better to return with the haughty and mean air of mercenaries, and a ridiculous contempt of their former condition, than with that love for their country and liberty which honourably distinguished their progenitors. It is the care of this benevolent family to remonstrate against these mistaken prejudices, to represent to the peasants the danger of their childrens principles; the

the ill consequences of sending them from home, and the continual risques they run of losing their life, fortune, and morals, where a thousand are ruined for one who does well. If after all they continue obstinate, they are left, at their own indiscretion, to run into vice and misery; and the care, which was thrown away on them, is turned upon those who have listened to reason. This is exerted in teaching them to honour their native condition, by seeming to honour it ourselves: we do not converse with peasants, indeed, in the style of courts; but we treat them with a grave and distant familiarity, which, without raising any one out of his station, teaches them to respect ours. There is not one honest labourer in the village, who does not rise greatly in his own estimation, when an opportunity offers of our shewing the difference of our behaviour to him, and to such petty visitants, who come home to make a figure, for a day or two, and to eclipse their relations. Mr Wolmar and the Baron, when he is here, seldom fail of being present at the exercises and reviews of the militia of the village and parts adjacent: their presence has a great effect on the youth of the country, who are naturally of a martial and spirited temper, and are extremely delighted to see themselves honoured with the presence of veteran officers. They are still prouder of their own merit, when they see soldiers retired from foreign service less expert than themselves: yet this they often do; for, do what you will, five pence a-day, and the fear of being caned, will never produce that emulation which may be excited in a free man
under

under arms, by the presence of his relations, his neighbours, his friends, his mistress, and the honour of his country.

The great maxim with Mrs Wolmar, therefore, is, never to encourage any one to change his condition, but to contribute all in her power to make every one happy in his present station; being particularly solicitous to prevent the happiest of all situations, that of a peasant in a free state, from being despised in favour of other employments.

I once made an objection on this subject, founded on the different talents which nature seems to have bestowed on mankind, in order to fit them for different occupations, without any regard to their birth. To this she answered, that there were two more material things to be consulted, before talents; namely, virtue and happiness. Man, said she, is too noble a being to be made a mere tool of for the use of others: he ought not to be employed in what he is fit for, without consulting how far such employment is fit for him; for we are not made for our stations, but our stations for us. In the right distribution of things, therefore, we should not seek that employment for which a man is best adapted, but that which is best adapted to make him virtuous and happy. For it can never be right to destroy one human soul for the temporal advantage of others, nor to make any man a villain for the use of honest people.

Now, out of a thousand persons, who leave their native villages, there are not ten of them but what are spoiled by going to town, and become even more profligate than those who initiate

tiate them into vice. Those, who succeed and make their fortunes, frequently compass it by base and dishonest means; while the unsuccessful, instead of returning to their former occupation, rather chuse to turn beggars and thieves. But, supposing that one out of the thousand resists the contagion of example, and perseveres in the sentiments of honesty, do you think that, upon the whole, his life is as happy as it might have been in the tranquil obscurity of his first condition?

To pursue one's genius, it is necessary first to know it. And is it an easy matter to discover the talents with which nature hath severally endowed us? So far otherwise, that it is very difficult to distinguish those of young persons the best educated and most attentively observed: how then shall a peasant, meanly bred, presume to judge of his own? There is nothing so equivocal as the genius frequently attributed to youth; the spirit of imitation has often a greater share in it than natural ability, and very often it depends more on accident than a determined inclination; nor does even inclination itself always determine the capacity. Real talents, or true genius, are attended with a certain simplicity of disposition, which makes it less restless and enterprising, less ready to thrust itself forward than a superficial and false one; which is nevertheless generally mistaken for the true, and consists only in a vain desire of making a figure without talents to support it. One of these geniuses hears the drum beat, and is immediately in idea a general; another sees a palace building, and directly commences architect.

Thus Gustin, my gardener, from seeing some of my works, must needs learn to draw. I sent him to Lausanne to a master, and he imagines himself already a fine painter.

The opportunity, and the desire of preferment, generally determine mens profession. But it is not enough to be sensible of the bent of our genius, unless we are willing to pursue it. Will a prince turn coachman, because he is expert at driving a set of horses? Will a duke turn cook, because he is ingenious at inventing ragouts? Our talents all tend to preferment; no one pretends to those which would fit him for an inferior station. Do you think this is agreeable to the order of nature? Suppose every one sensible of his own talents, and as willing to employ them, how is it possible? How could they surmount so many obstacles? How could they overcome so many unworthy competitors? He, who finds in himself the want of abilities, would call in subtilty and intrigue to his aid; and thereby frequently become an overmatch for others of greater capacity and sincerity. Have you not told me yourself a hundred times, that the many establishments in favour of the arts have only been of prejudice to them? In multiplying indiscreetly the number of professors and academicians, true merit is lost in the crowd; and the honours, due to the most ingenious, are always bestowed on the most intriguing. If there existed, indeed, a society, wherein the rank and employment of its respective members were exactly calculated to their talents and personal merit, every one might there aspire to the place he should be most fit for; but it is necessary

fary to conduct ourselves by other rules, and give up that of abilities, since the vilest of all talents is the only one that surely leads to fortune.

I will add further, continued she, that I cannot conceive the utility of having so many different talents displayed. It seems necessary, the number of persons so qualified should be exactly proportioned to the wants of society: now if those only were appointed to cultivate the earth who should have eminent talents for agriculture, or if all those were taken from that employment who might be found more proper for some other, there would not remain a sufficient number of labourers to furnish the common necessities of life. I am apt to think, therefore, that great talents in men are like great virtues in drugs, which nature has provided to cure our maladies, though its intention certainly was that we should never stand in need of them. In the vegetable creation there are plants which are poisonous: in the brutal, animals that would tear us to pieces; and among mankind there are those who possess talents no less destructive to their species. Besides, if every thing were to be put to that use for which its qualities seem best adapted, it might be productive of more harm than good in the world. There are thousands of simple honest people, who have no occasion for a diversity of great talents; supporting themselves better by their simplicity, than others with all their ingenuity. But, in proportion as their morals are corrupted, their talents are displayed, as if to serve as a supplement to the virtues they have lost, and to oblige the vicious to be useful in spite of themselves.

Another subject, on which we differed, was the relieving of beggars. As we live near a public road, great numbers are constantly passing by; and it is the custom of the house to give to every one that asks. I represented to her, that this practice was not only throwing that money away, which might be charitably bestowed on persons in real want; but that it tended to multiply beggars and vagabonds, who take pleasure in that idle life, and, by rendering themselves a burthen to society, deprive it of their labour.

I see very well, says she, you have imbibed prejudices, by living in great cities, and some of those maxims by which your complaisant reasoners love to flatter the hard-heartedness of the wealthy: you make use of their very expressions. Do you think to degrade a poor wretch below a human being, by giving him the contemptuous name of beggar? Compassionate as you really are, how could you suffer yourself to make use of it? Repeat it no more, my friend, it does not come well from your lips: it is more dishonourable for the cruel man by whom it is used, than for the unhappy wretch who bears it. I will not pretend to decide whether those, who thus inveigh against the giving alms, are right or wrong; but this I know, that Mr Wolmar, whose good sense is not inferior to that of your philosophers, and who has frequently told me of the arguments they use to suppress their natural compassion and sensibility, has always appeared to despise them, and has never disapproved of my conduct. His own argument is simple. We permit, says he, we even support at a great expence, a multitude of useless professions, many
of

of which serve only to spoil and corrupt our manners. Now, to look upon the profession of a beggar as a trade, so far are we from having any reason to fear the like bad consequences from the exercise of it, that, on the contrary, it serves to excite in us those sentiments of humanity which ought to unite all mankind. Again, if we look upon begging as a talent, why should I not reward the eloquence of a beggar, who has art enough to excite my compassion, and induce me to relieve him, as well as I do a comedian, who on the stage makes me shed a few fruitless tears? If the one makes me admire the good actions of others, the other induces me to do a good action myself: all, that we feel at the representation of a tragedy, goes off as soon as we come out of the playhouse; but the remembrance of the unhappy object we have relieved gives continual pleasure. It may be urged, that a great number of beggars are burthensome to a state: but of how many professions, which are tolerated and encouraged, may we not say the same? It belongs to the legislature and administration to take care there should be no beggars; but, in order to make them lay down their trade *, is it necessary to make all other ranks

K 3

of

* To give to beggars, say some people, is to raise a nursery of thieves: though it is, on the contrary, to prevent their becoming such. I allow that the poor ought not to be encouraged to turn beggars; but, when once they are so, they ought to be supported, lest they should turn robbers. Nothing induces people to change their profession so much as their not being able to live by it: now those, who have once experienced the lazy life of a beggar, get such an aversion to work, that they had rather go upon the highway, at the hazard of their necks,
than

of people inhuman and unnatural? For my part, continued Julia, without knowing what the poor may be to the state, I know they are all my brethren; and that I cannot, without thinking myself inexcusable, refuse them the small relief they ask of me. The greater part of them, I own, are vagabonds; but I know too much of life, to be ignorant how many misfortunes may reduce an honest man to such a situation; and how can I be sure, that an unhappy stranger, who comes, in the name of God, to implore my assistance, and to beg a morsel of bread, is not such an honest man ready to perish for want, and whom my refusal may drive to despair? The alms I distribute at the door are of no great value. A halfpenny and a piece of bread are refused to nobody; and twice the proportion is always given to such as are maimed, or otherwise evidently incapable of labour. Should they meet with the same relief at every house, which can afford it, it would be sufficient to support them on their journey; and that is all a needy traveller has a right to expect. But, supposing this was not enough to yield them any real help, it is at least a proof that we take some part in their di-

than betake themselves again to labour. A farthing is soon asked for and soon refused; but twenty farthings might provide a supper for a poor man, whom twenty refusals might exasperate to despair: and who is there who would ever refuse so slight a gift, if he reflected that he might thereby be the means of saving two men, the one from theft, and perhaps the other from being murdered? I have somewhere read that beggars are a kind of vermin that hang about the wealthy. It is natural for children to cling about their parents; but the rich, like cruel parents, disown theirs, and leave them to be maintained by each other.

distress, a sort of salutation that softens the rigour of refusing them more. A halfpenny and a morsel of bread cost little more, and are a more civil answer, than a mere *God help you*; which is too often the only thing bestowed, as if the gifts of providence were not placed in the hands of men, or that heaven had any other store on earth than what is laid up in the coffers of the rich. In short, whatever we ought to think of such unfortunate wretches, and though nothing should in justice be given to common beggars, we ought at least, out of respect to ourselves, to take some notice of suffering humanity, and not harden our hearts at the sight of a miserable fellow-creature.

In this manner I behave to those, who, without any other subterfuge or pretext, come openly a-begging. With respect to such as pretend to be workmen, and complain for want of employment, we have here tools of almost every kind for them, and we set them to work. By this means we assist them, and put their industry to the proof; a circumstance which is now so well-known, that the lazy cheat never comes again to the gate.

It is thus, my Lord, this angelic creature always deduces something from her own virtues, to combat those vain subtilties by which people of cruel dispositions palliate their vices. The solicitude and pains she takes to relieve the poor, are also ranked among her amusements, and take up great part of the time she can spare from her most important duties. After having performed her duty to others, she then thinks of herself; and the means she takes to render life agree-

agreeable may be reckoned among her virtues: so commendable are her constant motives of action, that moderation and good sense are always mixed with her pleasures! She is ambitious to please her husband, who always delights in seeing her chearful and gay; she is desirous of instilling into her children a taste for innocent pleasures, wherein moderation, order, and simplicity prevail, and secure the heart from the violence of impetuous passions. She amuses herself, therefore, to divert them, as the dove softens the grain to nourish the young ones.

Julia's mind and body are equally sensible. The same delicacy prevails as well in her senses as her sentiments. She was formed to know and taste every pleasure. Virtue having been long esteemed by her as the most refined of all delights, in the peaceful enjoyment of that supreme pleasure, she debars herself of none that are consistent with it; but then her method of enjoyment resembles the austerity of self-denial: not indeed of that afflicting and painful self-denial, which is hurtful to nature, and which its author rejects as ridiculous homage; but of that slight and moderate restraint, by which the empire of reason is preserved; and which serves as a whet to pleasure by preventing disgust. She will have it, that every thing which pleases the sense, and is not necessary to life, changes its nature, whenever it becomes habitual; that it ceases to be pleasant in becoming needful; that we thus by habit lay ourselves at once under a needless restraint, and deprive ourselves of a real pleasure; and that the art of satisfying our desires lies not in indulging, but in suppressing, them.

them. The method she takes to enhance the pleasures of the least amusement, is to deny herself the use of it twenty times for once that she enjoys it. Thus her mind preserves its first vigour; her taste is not spoiled by use; she has no need to excite it by excess; and I have often seen her take exquisite delight in a childish diversion, which would have been insipid to any other person on earth.

A still nobler object, which she proposes to herself from the exercise of this virtue, is that of remaining always mistress of herself, and thereby to accustom her passions to obedience, and to subject her inclinations to rule. This is a new way to be happy; for it is certain that we enjoy nothing with so little disquietude, as what we can part from without pain; and if the philosopher be happy, it is because he is the man from whom fortune can take the least.

But what appears to me the most singular in her moderation, is, that she pursues it for the very same reasons which hurry the voluptuous into excess. Life is indeed short, says she, which is a reason for enjoying it to the end, and managing its duration in such a manner as to make the most of it. If one day's indulgence and satiety deprives us of a whole year's taste for enjoyment, it is bad philosophy to pursue our desires so far as they may be ready to lead us, without considering whether we may not out-live our faculties, and our hearts be exhausted before our time. I see that our common epicures, in order to let slip no opportunity of enjoyment, lose all; and, perpetually anxious in the midst of pleasures, can find no enjoyment in any.

any. They lavish away the time of which they think they are œconomists, and ruin themselves, like misers, by knowing how to give any thing away. For my part, I hold the opposite maxim; and should prefer, in this case, rather too much severity than relaxation. It sometimes happens that I break up a party of pleasure, for no other reason than that it is too agreeable; and by repeating it another time, have the satisfaction of enjoying it twice.

Upon such principles are the sweets of life, and the pleasures of mere amusement, regulated here. Amidst her various application to the several branches of her domestic employment, Julia takes particular care that the kitchen is not neglected. Her table is spread with abundance; but it is not the destructive abundance of fantastic luxury: all the viands are common, but excellent, in their kind; the cookery is simple, but exquisite. All that consists in appearance only, whose nicety depends on the fashion, all your delicate and far-fetched dishes, whose scarcity is their only value, are banished from the table of Julia. Among the most delicious also of those which are admitted, they daily abstain from some; which they reserve in order to give an air of festivity to those meals for which they were intended, and which are thereby rendered more agreeable, without being more costly. But of what kind, think you, are these dishes which are so carefully husbanded? Choice game? Sea-fish? Foreign produce? No. Something better than all that. They are perhaps a particular choice salad of the country; fine greens of our own gardens; fish of the lake, dressed

dressed in a peculiar manner; cheese from the mountains; a German pasty, or game caught by some of the domestics. The table is served in a modest and rural but agreeable manner, chearfulness and gratitude crowning the whole. Your gilt covers, round which the guests sit starving with hunger; your pompous glasses, stuck out with flowers for the desert, are never introduced here, to take up the place intended for victuals; we are entirely ignorant of the art of satisfying hunger by the eye. But then no where do they so well know how to add welcome to good cheer, to eat a good deal without eating too much, to drink chearfully without intoxication, to sit so long at table, without being tired, and to rise from it without disgust. On the first floor there is a little dining-room, different from that in which we usually dine, which is on the ground floor. This room is built in the corner of the house, and has windows in two aspects: those on one side overlook the garden, beyond which we have a prospect of the lake between the trees: on the other side, we have a fine view of a spacious vineyard, that begins to display the golden harvest which we shall reap in about two months. The room is small, but ornamented with every thing that can render it pleasant and agreeable. It is here Julia gives her little entertainments to her father, to her husband, to her cousin, to me, to herself, and sometimes to her children. When she orders the table to be spread there, we know immediately the design; and Mr Wolmar has given it the name of the Saloon of Apollo: but this saloon differs no less from that of Lucullus,

in

in the choice of the persons entertained, than in that of the entertainment. Common guests are not admitted into it : we never dine there, when there are any strangers : it is the inviolable asylum of mutual confidence, friendship, and liberty. The society of hearts is there joined to the social bond of the table ; the entrance into it is a kind of initiation into the mysteries of a cordial intimacy ; nor do any persons ever meet there, but such as wish never to be separated. We wait impatiently for you, my Lord, who are to dine the very first day in the Apollo.

I was not at first admitted to that honour ; it was reserved for me till after my return from Mrs Orbe's. Not that I imagined they could add any thing to the obliging reception I met with on my arrival ; but the supper, made for me there, gave me other ideas. It is impossible to describe the delightful mixture of familiarity, cheerfulness, and social ease, which I then experienced, and had never before tasted in my whole life. I found myself more at liberty, without being told to assume it, and we seemed even to understand one another much better than before. The absence of the domestics, who were dismissed from their attendance, removed that reserve which I still felt at heart ; and it was then that I first, at the instance of Julia, resumed the custom I had laid aside for many years, of drinking wine after meals.

This supper quite enchanted me, and I wished that all our meals might have been made in the same manner. I knew nothing of this delightful room, said I to Mrs Wolmar ; why do
not

not you always eat here? See, replied she, how pretty it is! Would it not be a pity to spoil it? This answer seemed too much out of character for me not to suspect she had some farther meaning. But why, added I, have you not the same conveniences below, that the servants might be sent away, and leave us to talk more at liberty? That, replied she, would be too agreeable, and the trouble of being always at ease is the greatest in the world. I immediately comprehended her system by this, and concluded that her art of managing her pleasures consisted in being sparing of them.

I observe she dresses herself with more care than formerly. The only piece of vanity I ever reproached her for, was that of neglecting her dress. The haughty fair-one had her reasons, and left me no pretext to disown her power. But, do all she could, my enchantment was too strong for me to think it natural; I was too obstinate in attributing her negligence to art. Not that the power of her charms is diminished; but she now disdains to exert it; and I should be apt to say, she affected a greater neatness in her dress, that she might appear only a pretty woman, had I not discovered the reason for her present solicitude in this point. During the two first or three days I was mistaken; for, not reflecting that she was dressed in the same manner at my arrival, which was unexpected, I thought she had done it out of respect to me. I was undeceived, however, in the absence of Mr Wolmar. For the next day she was not attired with that elegance, which so eminently distinguished her

the preceding evening, nor with that affecting and voluptuous simplicity which formerly enchanted me; but with a certain modesty that speaks through the eyes to the heart, that inspires respect only, and to which beauty itself but gives additional authority. The dignity of wife and mother appeared in all her charms; the timid and affectionate looks she cast on me, were now mixed with an air of gravity and grandeur, which seemed to cast a vail over her features. In the mean time, she betrayed not the least alteration in her behaviour; her equality of temper, her candor knew nothing of affectation. She practised only a talent natural to her sex, to change sometimes our sentiments and ideas of them, by a different dress, by a cap of this form, or a gown of that colour. The day on which she expected her husband's return, she again found the art of adorning her natural charms without hiding them; she came from her toilet indeed a dazzling beauty, and I saw she was not less capable to outshine the most splendid dress, than to adorn the most simple. I could not help being vexed, when I reflected on the cause of her preparation.

This taste for ornament extends itself, from the mistress of the house, through all the family. The master, the children, the servants, the equipage, the building, the garden, the furniture, are all set off, and kept in such order, as shews what they are capable of, though magnificence, is despised:—I do not mean true magnificence, and which consists less in the expence, than in the good order and noble disposition of things

things *. For my own part, I must confess it appears to me a more grand and noble sight, to see a small number of people happy in themselves, and in each other, in a plain modest family, than to see the most splendid palace filled with tumult and discord, and every one of its inhabitants taking advantage of the general disorder, and building up their own fortunes and happiness on the ruin of another. A well governed private family forms a single object, agreeable and delightful to contemplate; whereas, in a riotous palace, we see only a confused assemblage of various objects, whose connection and dependence are merely apparent. At first sight, indeed, they seem operating to one common end; but a nearer examination soon deceives us.

To consult only our most natural impressions, it seems, that, to despise luxury and parade, we need less of moderation than of taste. Symmetry and regularity are pleasing to every eye. The picture of ease and happiness must affect every heart: but a vain pomp, which relates neither to regularity nor happiness, and has for its object only the desire of making a figure in the

L 2

eyes

* This appears to me indisputable. There is true magnificence in the proportion and symmetry of the parts of a great palace; but there is none in a confused heap of irregular buildings. There is a magnificence in the uniformity of a regiment in battalia; but none in the crowd of people, that stand gazing on them, although perhaps there is not a man among them whose apparel is not of more value than those of any individual soldier. In a word, magnificence is nothing more than a grand scene of regularity, whence it comes to pass, that, of all sights imaginable, the most magnificent are those of nature.

eyes of others, however favourable an idea it may excite in us of the person who displays it, can give little pleasure to the spectator. But what is taste? Does not a hundred times more taste appear in the order and construction of plain and simple things, than in those which are overloaded with finery? What is convenience? Is any thing in the world more inconvenient than pomp and pageantry *? What is grandeur? It is precisely the contrary. When I see the intention of an architect to build a large palace, I immediately ask myself why it is not larger? Why does not the man, who keeps fifty servants, if he aims at grandeur, keep an hundred? That fine silver plate, why is it not gold? The man who gilds his chariot, why does he not also gild the ceiling of his apartment? If his ceilings are gilt, why does he not gild the roof too? He, who was desirous of building an high tower,

* The noise of people in a house of distinction continually disturbs the quiet of the master of it. It is impossible for him to conceal any thing from so many arguses. A crowd of creditors make him pay dear for that of his admirers. His apartments are generally so large and splendid, that he is obliged to betake himself to a closet, that he may sleep at ease, and his monkey is often better lodged than himself. If he would dine, it depends on his cook, and not on his appetite; if he would go abroad, he lies at the mercy of his horses. A thousand embarrassments stop him in the streets; he is impatient to be where he is going, but knows not the use of his legs. His mistress expects him; but the dirty pavement frightens him, and the weight of his laced coat oppresses him, so that he cannot walk twenty paces. Hence he loses, indeed, the opportunity of seeing his mistress; but he is well repaid by the by-standers for the disappointment, every one remarking his equipage, admiring it, and saying aloud to the next person, There goes Mr Such-a-one!

tower, was right in his intention to raise it up to heaven; otherwise it was to no purpose to build, as the point where he might last stop, would only serve to shew, at the greater distance, his want of ability. O man! vain and feeble creature! shew me thy power, and I will shew thee thy misery.

On the other hand, a regularity in the disposal of things, every one of which is of real life, not only presents an agreeable prospect, but as it pleases the eye, at the same time gives content to the heart. For a man views them always in a pleasing light, as relating to, and sufficient for, himself. The picture of his own wants of weakness does not appear, nor does the chearful prospect affect him with sorrowful reflections. I defy any sensible man to contemplate, for an hour, the palace of a prince, and the pomp which reigns there, without falling into melancholy reflections, and bemoaning the lot of humanity. But the prospect of this house, with the uniform and simple life of its inhabitants, diffuse over the mind of the spectator a secret pleasure, which is perpetually increasing. A small number of good-natured people, united by their mutual wants and reciprocal benevolence, concur by their different employments in promoting the same end; every one finding in his situation all that is requisite to contentment, and not desiring to change it, applies himself as if he thought to stay here all his life; the only ambition among them being that of properly discharging their respective duties. There is so much moderation in those who command, and so much zeal in those who obey, that equals

might agree to distribute the same employments among them, without any one having reason to complain of his lot. No one envies that of another; no one thinks of augmenting his fortune, but by adding to the common good; the master and mistress estimating their own happiness by that of their domestics and the people about them. One finds here nothing to add or diminish, because here is nothing but what is useful, and that indeed is all that is to be found; insomuch that nothing is wanted which may not be had, and of that there is always a sufficiency. Suppose, now, to all this were added lace, pictures, lustres, gilding; in a moment you would impoverish the scene. In seeing so much abundance in things necessary, and no mark of superfluity, one is now apt to think, that if those things which are not here were the objects of choice, they would be had in the same abundance. In seeing also so plentiful a provision made for the poor, one is led to say, This house cannot contain its wealth. In my opinion this is true magnificence.

These signs of opulence, however, surprised me, when I first heard what fortune must support it. You are running yourselves, said I to Mr and Mrs Wolmar; it is impossible so moderate a revenue can support so much expence. They smiled, and soon convinced me, that, without retrenching any of their family-expences, they could, if they pleased, lay up money and increase their estate, instead of diminishing it. Our grand secret, to grow rich, said they, is to have as little to do with money as possible, and to avoid, as much as may be, those inter-
me-

mediate exchanges, which are made between the harvest and the consumption. None of those exchanges are made without some loss; and such losses, if multiplied, would reduce a very good estate to little or nothing, as by means of brokerage a valuable gold box may fetch in a sale the price only of a trifling toy. The expence of transporting our produce is avoided, by making use of some part on the spot, and that of exchange, by using others in their natural state. And as for the indispensable necessity of converting those in which we abound for such as we want, instead of making pecuniary bargains, we endeavour to make real exchanges, in which the convenience of both parties supplies the place of profit.

I conceive, answered I, the advantages of this method; but it does not appear to me without inconvenience. For, besides the trouble to which it must subject you, the profit must be rather apparent than real; and what you lose in the management of your own estate, probably overbalances the profits the farmers would make of you. The peasants are better œconomists, both in the expences of cultivation, and in gathering their produce, than you can be. That is a mistake, replied Mr Wolmar; the peasant thinks less of augmenting the produce than of sparing his expences, because the cost is more difficult for him to raise than the profits are useful. The tenants view is not so much to increase the value of the land, as to lay out but little on it; and if he depends on any certain gain, it is less by improving the soil than exhausting it. The best that can happen, is, that
in-

instead of exhausting, he quite neglects it. Thus, for the sake of a little ready money, gathered in with ease, an indolent proprietor prepares for himself, or his children, great losses, much trouble, and sometimes the ruin of his patrimony.

I confess indeed, (continued Mr Wolmar,) that I am at a much greater expence in the cultivation of my land, than a farmer would be: but then I myself reap the profit of his labour, and the culture being much greater than his, my crop is proportionably larger; so that, though I am at a greater expence, I am still, upon the whole, a gainer, besides, this excess of expence is only apparent, and is, in reality, productive of great œconomy; for, were we to let out our lands for others to cultivate, we should be ourselves idle: we must live in town, where the necessaries of life are dear; we must have amusement, that would cost us much more than those we take here. The business, which you call a trouble, is at once our duty and our delight; and, thanks to the regulation it is under, is never troublesome: on the contrary, it serves to employ us, instead of those destructive schemes of pleasure, which people in town run into, and which a country life prevents, whilst that which contributes to our happiness becomes our amusement.

Cast your eyes around you, continued he, and you will see nothing but what is useful; yet all these things cost little, and save a world of unnecessary expence. Our table is furnished with nothing but viands of our own growth; our dress and furniture are almost all composed of the ma-
nu-

nufactures of the country : nothing is despised with us because it is common, nor is any thing held in esteem because it is scarce. As every thing, that comes from abroad, is liable to be disguised and adulterated, we confine ourselves, as well through nicety as moderation, to the choice of the best home-commodities, the quality of which is less dubious. Our viands are plain, but choice ; and nothing is wanting to make ours a sumptuous table, but the transporting it a hundred leagues of ; in which case every thing would be delicate, every thing would be rare, and even our trouts of the lake would be thought infinitely better, were they to be eaten at Paris.

The same rule takes place in the choice of our apparel, which you see is not neglected ; but its elegance is the only thing we study, and not its cost, and much less its fashion. There is a wide difference between the real value of things, and that which they derive only from opinion. The former, however, is all that Julia regards ; in choosing a gown, she inquires not so much whether the pattern be old or new, as whether the stuff be good and becoming. The novelty of it is even sometimes the cause of her rejecting it, especially when it enhances the price, by giving it an imaginary value.

Consider further, that the effect of every thing here arises less from itself than from its use, and its dependencies ; insomuch that out of parts worth little, Julia has compounded a whole of great value. Taste delights in creating and stamping upon things a value of its own : as the laws of fashion are inconstant and ruinous, her's is economical and lasting. What true
taste

taste once approves, must be always good; and though it be seldom in the mode, it is, on the other hand, never improper. Thus, in her modest simplicity, she deduces, from the use and fitness of things, such sure and unalterable rules, as will stand their ground when the vanity of fashions is no more.

In fine, the abundance of mere necessities can never degenerate into abuse; for what is necessary has its natural bounds, and our real wants know no excess. One may lay out the price of twenty suits of cloaths in buying one, and eat up at a meal the income of a whole year; but we cannot wear two suits at one time, nor dine twice the same day. Thus the caprice of opinion is boundless, whereas nature confines us on all sides; and he, who, with a moderate fortune, contents himself with living well, will run no hazard of being ruined.

Thus you see, continued the prudent Wolmar, how a little œconomy and industry may lift us out of the reach of fortune. It depends only on ourselves to increase ours, without changing our manner of living; for we advance nothing but with a view of profit, and whatever we expend puts us soon in a condition to afford more expence.

And yet, my Lord, nothing of all this appears at first sight: the general air of affluence, and profusion, hides that order and regularity to which it is owing. One must be here some time to perceive those sumptuary laws, which are productive of so much ease and pleasure; and it is with difficulty that one at first comprehends how they enjoy what they spare. On reflection,
how-

however, one's satisfaction increaseth, because it is plain that the source is inexhaustible, and that the art of enjoying life serves at the same time to prolong it. How can any one be weary of a state so conformable to that of nature? how can he waste his inheritance by improving it every day? how ruin his fortune, by spending only his income? When one year provides for the next, what can disturb the peace of the present? The fruits of their past labour support their present abundance, and those of their present labour provide a future plenty: they enjoy at once what is expended and what is received, and both past and future times unite in the security of the present.

I have looked into all the particulars of domestic management, and find the same spirit prevail throughout the whole. All their lace and embroidery are worked in the house; all their cloth is spun at home, or by poor women supported by their charity. Their wool is sent to the manufactories of the country, from whence they receive cloth, in exchange, for cloathing the servants. Their wine, oil, and bread, are all made at home; and they have woods, of which they cut down regularly what is necessary for firing. The butcher is paid in cattle, the grocer in corn, for the nourishment of his family; the wages of the workmen and the servants are paid out of the produce of the lands they cultivate; the rent of their houses in town serves to furnish those they inhabit in the country; the interest of their money in the public funds furnishes a subsistence for the masters, and also the little plate they have occasion for.

The

The sale of the corn and wine, which remain, furnishes a fund for extraordinary expences; a fund which Julia's prudence will never permit to be exhausted, and which her charity will not suffer to increase. She allows for matters of mere amusement the profits, only, of the labour done in the house, of the grubbing up uncultivated land, of planting trees, &c. Thus the produce and the labour always compensating each other, the balance cannot be disturbed; and from the nature of things, it cannot be destroyed. Moreover, the abstinence, which Julia imposes on herself, through that voluptuous temperance I have mentioned, is at once productive of new means of pleasure, and new resources of economy. For example, she is very fond of coffee, and, when her mother was living, drank it every day. But she has left off that practice, in order to heighten her taste for it, now drinking it only when she has company, or in her favourite dining-room, in order to give her entertainments the air of a treat. This is a little indulgence which is the more agreeable, as it costs her little, and at the same time restrains and regulates her appetite. On the contrary, she studies to discover and gratify the taste of her father and husband with unwearied attention; a charming prodigality which makes them like every thing so much the more, for the pleasure they see she takes in providing it. They both love to sit a little after meals, in the manner of the Swifs; on which occasions, particularly after supper, she seldom fails to treat them with a bottle of wine more old and delicate than common. I was at first deceived by the fine names she gave

to

to her wines, which, in fact, I found to be extremely good; and, drinking them as wines of the growth of the countries whose names they bore, I took Julia to task for so manifest a breach of her own maxims; but she laughed at me, and put me in mind of a passage in Plutarch, where Flaminius compares the Asiatic troops of Antiochus, distinguished by a thousand barbarous names, to the several ragouts under which a friend of his had disguised one and the same kind of meat. It is just so, said she, with these foreign wines. The Lisbon, the Sherry, the Malaga, the Champagne, the Syracuse, which you have drank here with so much pleasure, are all, in fact, no other than wines of this country, and you see from here the vineyard that produced them. If they are inferior in quality to the celebrated wines, whose names they bear, they are also without their inconveniences; and as one is certain of the materials of which they are composed, they may be drank with less danger. I have reason to believe, continued she, that my father and husband like them as well as more scarce and costly wines. Julia's wines, indeed, says Mr Wolmar to me, have a taste which pleases us better than any others, and that arises from the pleasure she takes in preparing them. Ah, (returned she,) then they will be always exquisite.

You will easily judge whether, amidst such a variety of business, that indolence and want of employment, which make company, visitings, and such formal society necessary, can find any place here. We visit our neighbours, indeed, just enough to keep up an agreeable acquaint-

ance, but too little to be slaves to each other's company. Our guests are always welcome, but are never invited or intreated. The rule here is to see just so much company as to prevent the losing a taste for retirement; rural occupation supplying the place of amusements: and to him who finds an agreeable and peaceful society in his own family, all other company is insipid. The manner, however, in which we pass our time, is too simple and uniform to tempt many people; but it is the disposition of those who have adopted it, that makes it delightful. How can persons of a sound mind be wearied with discharging the most endearing and pleasing duties of humanity, and with rendering each other's lives mutually happy? Satisfied every night with the transactions of the day, Julia wishes for nothing different on the morrow. Her constant morning prayer is, that the present day may prove like the past. She is engaged perpetually in the same round of business, because no alteration would give her more pleasure. Thus, without doubt, she enjoys all the happiness of which human life is capable: for is not our being pleased with the continuation of our lot a certain sign that we are happy?

One seldom sees in this place those knots of idle people, which are usually called good company: but then one beholds those who interest our affections infinitely more, such as peaceable peasants, without art, and without politeness; but honest, simple, and contented in their station: old officers retired from the service; merchants wearied with application to business, and tired of growing rich; prudent mothers of families,

milies, who bring their children to the school of modesty and good manners: such is the company Julia assembles about her. To these her husband sometimes adds some of those adventurers, reformed by age and experience, who, having purchased wisdom at their own cost, return without reluctance to cultivate their paternal soil, which they wish they had never left. When any one relates at table the occurrences of their lives, they consist not of the marvellous adventures of the wealthy Sindbad, recounting, in the midst of eastern pomp and effeminacy, how he acquired his vast wealth. Their tales are the simple narratives of men of sense, who, from the caprice of fortune, and the injustice of mankind, are disgusted with the vain pursuit of imaginary happiness, and have acquired a taste for the enjoyment of that which is real.

Would you believe that even the conversation of peasants hath its charms for these elevated minds, of whom the philosopher himself might be glad to profit in wisdom? The judicious Wolmar discovers in their rural simplicity more characteristic distinctions, more men that think for themselves, than under the uniform mask worn in great cities, where every one appears what other people are rather than what he is himself. The tender Julia finds their hearts susceptible of the smallest offers of kindness, and that they esteem themselves happy in the interest she takes in their happiness. Neither their hearts nor understandings are formed by art; they have not learned to model themselves after the fashion, and are less the creatures of men than those of nature.

Often, in his rounds, Mr Wolmar picks up some honest old peasant, whose experience and understanding give him great pleasure. He brings him home to Julia, by whom he is received in a manner which denotes, not her politeness, or the dignity of her station, but the benevolence and humanity of her character. The good man is kept to dinner; Julia placing him next herself, obligingly helping him, and asking kindly after his family and affairs. She smiles not at his embarrassment, nor takes notice of the rusticity of his manners; but by the ease of her own behaviour frees him from all restraint, maintaining throughout that tender and affectionate respect, which is due to an infirm old age, honoured by an irreproachable life. The venerable old man is enraptured, and in the fullness of heart, seems to experience again the vivacity of youth. In drinking healths to a young and beautiful lady, his half-frozen blood grows warm; and he begins to talk of former times, the days of his youth, his amours, the campaigns he has made, the battles he has been in, of the magnanimity and feats of his fellow-soldiers, of his return to his native country, of his wife, his children, his rural employments, the inconveniences he has remarked, and the remedies he thinks may be applied to remove them: during which long detail, he often lets fall some excellent moral, or useful lesson in agriculture, the dictates of age and experience; or should there be even nothing in what he says, so long as he takes a pleasure in saying it, Julia would take pleasure in hearing.

She retires after dinner into her own apartment,

ment, to fetch some little present to the wife or daughter of the good old man. This is presented to him by the children, who in return receive some trifle of him, with which she had secretly provided him for that purpose. Thus she initiates them betimes, to that intimate and pleasing benevolence, which knits the bond of society between persons of different conditions. The children are accordingly accustomed to respect old age, to esteem simplicity of manners, and to distinguish merit in all ranks of people. The young peasants, on the other hand, seeing their fathers thus entertained at a gentleman's house, and admitted to the master's table, take no offence at being themselves excluded: they think such exclusion not owing to their rank, but their age; they do not say, We are too poor, but, We are too young, to be thus treated. Thus the honour done to their aged parents, and their hope of one day enjoying the same distinction, make them amends for being debarred from it at present, and excite them to become worthy of it.

At his return home to his cottage, their delighted guest impatiently produces the presents he has brought his wife and children, who are overjoyed at the honour done them; the good old man, at the same time, eagerly relating to them the reception he met with, the dainties he has eaten, the wines he has tasted, the obliging discourse and conversation, the affability of the gentlefolks, and the assiduity of the servants; in the recital of all which, he enjoys it a second time, and the whole family partake of the honour done to their head. They join in concert

to bless that illustrious house, which affords at once an example to the rich, and an asylum for the poor, and whose generous inhabitants disdain not the indigent, but do honour to grey hairs. Such is the incense that is pleasing to benevolent minds; and, if there be any prayers to which heaven lends a gracious ear, they are certainly not those which are offered up by meanness and flattery in the hearing of the person prayed for, but such as the grateful and simple heart dictates in secret beneath its own roof.

Thus it is that agreeable and affectionate sentiments give charms to a life, insipid to indifferent minds: it is thus, that business, labour, and retirement, become amusing by the art of managing them. A sound mind knows how to take delight in vulgar employments, as a healthy body relishes the most simple aliments. All those indolent people, who are diverted with so much difficulty, owe their disgust to their vices, and lose their taste for pleasure only with that of their duty. As to Julia, it is directly contrary; the employment, which a certain languor of mind made her formerly neglect, becomes now interesting from the motive that excites to it. One must be totally insensible, to be always without vivacity. She formerly sought solitude and retirement, in order to indulge her reflections on the object of her passion; at present she has acquired new activity, by having formed new and different connections. She is not one of those indolent mothers of a family, who are contented to study their duty when they should discharge it, and lose their time in in-
qui-

quiring after the business of others, which they should employ in dispatching their own. Julia practises at present what she learnt long ago. Her time for reading and study has given place to that of action. As she rises an hour later than her husband, so she goes an hour later to bed. This hour is the only time she employs in study; for the day is not too long for the various business in which she is engaged.

This, my Lord, is what I had to say to you concerning the oeconomy of this house, and of the retired life of those who govern it. Contented in their station, they peaceably enjoy its conveniences; satisfied with their fortune, they seek not to augment it for their children; but to leave them with the inheritance they themselves received, an estate in good condition, affectionate servants, a taste for employment, order, moderation, and for every thing that can render delightful and agreeable to men of sense the enjoyment of a moderate fortune, as prudently preserved as honestly acquired.

LETTER CXXXVII.

To Lord B——.

WE have had visitors for some days past. They left us yesterday, and we renewed that agreeable society subsisting between us three, which is by so much the more delightful, as there is nothing, even in the bottom of our hearts, that we desire to conceal from each other. What a pleasure do I take, in assuming a
new

new being which renders me worthy of your confidence. At every mark of esteem which I receive from Julia and her husband, I say to myself with an air of self-sufficiency, At length I may venture to appear before Lord B——. It is with your assistance, it is under your eyes, that I hope to do honour to my present situation by my past follies. If an extinguished passion throws the mind into a state of dejection, a passion subdued adds to the consciousness of victory, a new elevation of sentiment, a more lively attachment to all that is sublime and beautiful. Shall I lose the fruit of a sacrifice, which hath cost me so dear? No, my Lord; I feel that, animated by your example, my heart is going to profit by all those ardent sentiments it has conquered. I feel that it was necessary for me to be what I was, in order for me to become what I am.

After having thrown away six days in frivolous conversation with persons indifferent to us, we passed yesterday morning, after the manner of the English, by ourselves and in silence; tasting at once the pleasure of being together, and the sweetness of self-recollection. How small a part of mankind know any thing of the pleasures of this situation! I never saw a person in France who had the least idea of it. The conversation of friends, say they, can never be exhausted. It is true, the tongue may easily find words for common attachments: but friendship, my Lord, friendship! thou animating celestial sentiment! what language is worthy of thee? What tongue presumes to be thy interpreter? Can any thing spoken to a friend equal what is felt in his company? Good God! how many things are conveyed

veyed by a squeeze of the hand, by an animating look, by an eager embrace, by a sigh that rises from the bottom of the heart ! And how cold in comparison is the first word which is spoken after that ! I shall never forget the evenings I passed at Befançon, those delightful moments sacred to silence and friendship. Never, oh B——— ! thou noblest of men ! sublimest of friends ! no, never have I undervalued what you then did for me ; never have my lips presumed to mention it.

It is certain, that this state of contemplation affords the greatest delight to susceptible minds. But I have always observed, that impertinent visitors prevent one from enjoying it, and that friends ought to be by themselves, to be at liberty to say nothing. At such a time one should be, if one may use the expression, collected in each other ; the least avocation is destructive, the least constraint is insupportable. It is then so sweet to pronounce the dictates of the heart without restraint. It seems as if one dared to think freely only of what one can as freely speak ; it seems as if the presence of a stranger restrained the sentiment, and compressed those hearts which could so fully dictate themselves alone.

Two hours passed away in this silent ecstasy, more delightful, a thousand times, than the frigid repose of the deities of Epicurus. After breakfast, the children came, as usual, into the apartment of their mother ; who, instead of retiring and shutting herself up with them in the work-room, according to custom, kept them with her, as if to make them some amends for the time they had lost without seeing us ; and

we none of us parted till dinner. Harriot, who begins to know how to handle her needle, sat at work before Fanny, who was weaving lace, and rested her cushion on the back of her little chair. The two boys were busy at a table turning over the leaves of a book of prints, the subject of which the eldest explained to the younger ; Harriot, who knew the whole by heart, being attentive to, and correcting him when wrong ; and sometimes, pretending to be ignorant what figures they were at, she made it a pretence to rise, and go backwards and forwards from the chair to the table. During these little lessons, which were given and taken with little pains and less restraint, the younger boy was playing with some counters which he had secreted under the book.

Mrs Wolmar was at work on some embroidery near the window opposite the children, and her husband and I were still sitting at the tea-table, reading the Gazette, to which she gave but little attention. But when we came to the article which mentions the illness of the king of France, and the singular attachment of his people, unequalled by any thing but that of the Romans for Germanicus, she made some reflections on the disposition of that affectionate and benevolent nation, whom all the world hate, whilst they have no hatred to any one ; adding, that she envied only a sovereign the power of making himself beloved. To this her husband replied, You have no need to envy a sovereign, who have so long had us all for your subjects. On which she turned her head, and cast a look on him so affecting and tender, that it struck me
pro-

prodigiously. She said nothing indeed; for what could she say equal to such a look? Our eyes meet: and I could perceive, by the manner in which her husband pressed my hand, that the same emotion had affected us all three, and that the delightful influence of her expansive heart diffused itself around, and triumphed over insensibility itself.

We were thus disposed when that silent scene began, of which I just now spoke: you may judge, that it was not the consequence of coldness or chagrin. It was first interrupted by the little management of the children; who, nevertheless, as soon as we left off speaking, moderated their prattle, as if afraid of disturbing the general silence. The little teacher was the first that lowered her voice, made signs to the others, and ran about on tip-toe, while their play became the more diverting by this light constraint. This scene, which seemed to present itself in order to prolong our tenderness, produced its natural effect.

Ammutifcon le lingue, e parlan l'alme.

Our hearts conversing while our tongues were mute.

How many things may be said without opening one's lips! How warm the sentiments that may be communicated, without the cold interposition of speech! Julia insensibly permitted her attention to be engaged by the same object. Her eyes were fixed on the three children; and her heart, ravished with the most enchanting ecstacy,

ecstasy, animated her charming features with all the affecting sweetness of maternal tenderness.

Thus given up to this double contemplation, Wolmar and I were indulging our reveries, when the children put an end to them. The eldest, who was diverting himself with the prints, seeing the counters prevented his brother from being attentive, took an opportunity, when he had piled them up, to give them a knock and throw them down on the floor. Marcellin fell-a-crying; and Julia, without troubling herself to quiet him, bid Fanny pick up the counters. The child was immediately hushed; the counters were nevertheless not brought him, nor did he begin to cry again as I expected. This circumstance, which however was nothing in itself, recalled to my mind a great many others, to which I had given no attention; and when I think of them, I do not remember ever to have seen children, with so little speaking to, give so little trouble. They hardly ever are out of the mother's sight, and yet one can hardly perceive they are in company. They are lively and playful, as children of their age should be, but never clamorous or teizing; they are already discreet, before they know what discretion is. But what I am most surpris'd at is, that all this appears to be brought about of itself; and that, with such an affectionate tenderness for her children, Julia seems to give herself so little concern about them. In fact, one never sees her very earnest to make them speak or hold their tongues, to make them do things or let them alone. She never disputes with them; she never contradicts them in their amusements: so
that

that one would be apt to think she contented herself with seeing and loving them; and that when they have passed the day with her, she had discharged towards them the whole duty of a mother.

Though this peaceable tranquillity appears more agreeable in contemplation than the restless solicitude of other mothers, yet I was not a little surpris'd at an apparent indolence so little conformable to her character. I would have had her even a little discontented, amidst so many reasons to the contrary: so well doth a superfluous activity become maternal affection! I would willingly have attributed the goodness of the children to the care of the mother; and should have been glad to have observed more faults in them, that I might have seen her more solicitous to correct them.

After busying myself a long time with these reflections in silence, I at last determin'd to communicate them to her. I see, said I, that heaven rewards virtuous mothers in the good disposition of their children; but the best disposition must be cultivated. Their education ought to begin from the time of their birth. Can there be a time more proper to form their minds, than when they have received no impression that need to be effaced? If you give them up to themselves in their infancy, at what age do you expect them to be docile? While you have nothing else to teach them, you ought to teach them obedience. Why, returned she, do my children disobey me? That were difficult, said I, as you lay no commands upon them. On this she looked at her husband, and smiled; then, taking them by the hand, she led me into the

closet, that we might converse without being heard by the children.

Here, explaining her maxims at leisure, she discovered to me, under that air of negligence, the most vigilant attention of maternal tenderness. I was a long time, said she, of your opinion with regard to the premature instruction of children; and while I expected my first child, was anxious concerning the obligations I should soon have to discharge. I used often to speak to Mr Wolmar on that subject. What better guide could I take than so sensible an observer, in whom the interest of a father was united to the indifference of a philosopher? He fulfilled, and indeed surpassed my expectations. He soon made me sensible, that the first and most important part of education, precisely that which all the world neglects *, is that of preparing a child to receive instruction. The common error of parents, who pique themselves on their own knowledge, is to suppose their children capable of reasoning as soon as they are born, and to talk to them as if they were grown persons before they can speak. Reason is the instrument they use, whereas every other means ought first to be used, in order to form their reason; for it is certain, that of all the knowledge which men acquire, or are capable of acquiring, the art of reasoning is the last and most difficult to learn. By talking to them, at so early an age, in a language they do not understand, they learn to be

* Locke himself, the sagacious Locke, has forgot it, instructing us rather in the things we ought to require of our children, than in the means of obtaining them.

be satisfied with mere words; to talk to others in the same manner; to contradict every thing that is said to them; to think themselves as wise as their teachers: and all that one thinks to obtain by reasonable motives, is in fact obtained only by those of fear or vanity.

The most consummate patience would be wearied out by endeavouring to educate a child in this manner; and thus it is, that, fatigued and disgusted with the perpetual importunity of children, their parents, unable to support the noise and disorder they themselves have given rise to, are obliged to part with them, and to deliver them over to the care of a master; as if one could expect in a preceptor more patience and good-nature than in a father.

Nature, continued Julia, would have children be children before they are men. If we attempt to pervert that order, we produce only forward fruit, which has neither maturity nor flavour, and will soon decay; we raise young professors and old children. Infancy has a manner of perceiving, thinking, and feeling, peculiar to itself. Nothing is more absurd than to think of submitting ours in its stead; and I would as soon expect a child of mine to be five feet high, as to have a mature judgment at the age of ten years.

The understanding does not begin to form itself till after some years, and when the corporeal organs have acquired a certain consistence. The design of nature is therefore evidently to strengthen the body, before the mind is exercised. Children are always in motion; rest and reflection are inconsistent with their age; a stu-

dious and sedentary life would prevent their growth and injure their health; neither their body nor mind can support restraint. Perpetually shut up in a room with their books, they lose their vigour, become delicate, feeble, sickly, rather stupid than reasonable; and their minds suffer, during their whole lives, for the weakness of their bodies.

But even though such premature instruction were as profitable as it is really hurtful to their understandings, a very great inconvenience would attend the application of it indiscriminately to all, without regard to the particular genius of each. For, besides the constitution common to its species, every child at its birth possesses a peculiar temperament, which determines its genius and character; and which it is improper either to pervert or restrain; the business of education being only to model and bring it to perfection. All these characters are, according to Mr Wolmar, good in themselves: for nature, says he, makes no mistakes. All the vices imputed to malignity of disposition, are only the effect of the bad form it hath received. According to him, there is not a villain upon earth, whose natural propensity, well directed, might not have been productive of great virtues; nor is there a wrong-head in being, that might not have been of use to himself and society, had his natural talents taken a certain bias; just as deformed and monstrous images are rendered beautiful and proportionable, by placing them in a proper point of view. Every thing, says he, tends to the common good in the universal system of nature. Every man has his place assigned

signed in the best order and arrangement of things; the business is to find out that place, and not to disturb such order. What must be the consequence then of an education begun in the cradle, and carried on always in the same manner, without regard to the vast diversity of temperaments and genius in mankind? Useless or hurtful instructions would be given to the greater part, while at the same time they are deprived of such as would be most useful and convenient; nature would be confined on every side, and the greatest qualities of the mind defaced, in order to substitute in their place mean and little ones, of no utility. By using indiscriminately the same means with different talents, the one serves to deface the other, and all are confounded together. Thus, after a great deal of pains thrown away in spoiling the natural endowments of children, we presently see those transitory and frivolous ones of education decay and vanish, while those of nature, being totally obscured, appear no more: and thus we lose at once both what we have pulled down, and what we have raised up. In a word, in return for so much pains indiscreetly taken, all these little prodigies become wits without sense, and men without merit, remarkable only for their weakness and insignificancy.

I understand your maxims, said I to Julia; but I know not how to reconcile them with your own opinion on the little advantage arising from the display of the genius and natural talents of individuals, either respecting their own happiness or the real interests of society. Would it not be infinitely better to form a perfect model,

del, by animating one, restraining another, by regulating its passions, improving its understanding, and thus correcting nature?—Correcting nature! says Mr Wolmar, interrupting me, that is a very fine expression; but before you make use of it, pray reply to what Julia has already advanced.

The most significant reply, as I thought, was to deny the principle on which her arguments were founded; which I accordingly did. You suppose, said I, that the diversity of temperament and genius, which distinguish individuals, is the immediate work of nature; whereas nothing is less evident. For, if our minds are naturally different, they must be unequal; and if nature has made them unequal, it must be by enduing some, in preference to others, with a more refined perception, a greater memory, or a greater capacity of attention. Now, as to perception and memory, it is proved by experience, that their different degrees of extent or perfection are not the standard of genius and abilities; and as to a capacity of attention, it depends solely on the force of the passions by which we are animated; and it is also proved that all mankind are by nature susceptible of passions, strong enough to excite in them that degree of attention necessary to a superiority of genius.

If therefore a diversity of genius, instead of being derived from nature, be the effect of education; that is to say, of the different ideas and sentiments which objects excite in us during our infancy, of the various circumstances in which we are engaged, and of all the impressions we receive; so far should we be from waiting to
know

know the character of a child before we give it education, that we should, on the contrary, be in haste to form its character by giving it a proper education.

To this he replied, that it was not his way to deny the existence of any thing, because he could not explain it. Look, says he, upon those two dogs in the court-yard. They are of the same litter; they have been fed and trained together; have never been parted; and yet one of them is a brisk, lively, good-natured, docible cur; while the other is lumpish, heavy, cross-grained, and incapable of learning any thing. Now their difference of temperament, only, can have produced in them that of character, as the difference of our interior organisation produces in us that of our minds: in every other circumstance they have been alike—Alike! interrupted I; what a vast difference may there not have been, though unobserved by you? How many minute objects may not have acted on the one, and not on the other! How many little circumstances may not have differently affected them, which you have not perceived! Very pretty, indeed, says he; so, I find you reason like the astrologers; who, when two men are mentioned of different fortune, yet born under the same aspect, deny the identity of circumstances. On the contrary, they maintain, that, on account of the rapidity of the heavenly motions, there must have been an immense distance between the themes, in the horoscope, of the one and the other; and that, if the precise moment of their births had been carefully noted, the objection had been turned into a proof.

Let

Let us, however, leave these subtilties, and confine ourselves to observation. This may teach us, indeed, that there are characters which are known almost at the birth, and children that may be studied at the breast of their nurse : but these are of a particular class, and receive their education in beginning to live. As for others, who are later known, to attempt to form their genius before their characters are distinguished, is to run a risque of spoiling what is good in their natural dispositions, and substituting what is worse in its place. Did not your master Plato maintain, that all the art of man, that all philosophy could not extract from the human mind what nature had not implanted there ; as all the operations in chemistry are incapable of extracting from any mixture more gold than is already contained in it ? This is not true of our sentiments or our ideas ; but it is true of our disposition or capacity of acquiring them. To change the genius, one must be able to change the interior organisation of the body ; to change a character, one must be capable of changing the temperament on which it depends. Have you ever heard of a passionate man's becoming patient and temperate, or of a frigid methodical genius having acquired a spirited imagination ? For my own part, I think it would be just as easy to make a fair man brown, or a blockhead a man of sense. It is in vain then to attempt to model different minds by one common standard. One may restrain, but we can never change them : one may hinder men from appearing what they are, but can never make them really otherwise ; and, though they
disguise

disguise their sentiments in the ordinary commerce of life, you will see them re-assume their real characters on every important occasion. Besides, our business is not to change the character, and alter the natural disposition of the mind, but, on the contrary, to improve and prevent its degenerating; for by these means it is, that a man becomes what he is capable of being, and that the work of nature is compleated by education. Now, before any character can be cultivated, it is necessary that it should be studied; that we should patiently wait its opening; that we should furnish occasions for it to display itself; and that we should forbear doing any thing, rather than do wrong. To one genius it is necessary to give wings, and to another shackles; one should be spurred forward, another reined in; one should be encouraged, another intimidated; sometimes both should be checked, and at others assisted. One man is formed to extend human knowledge to the highest degree; to another it is even dangerous to learn to read. Let us wait for the opening of reason; it is that which displays the character, and gives it its true form: it is by that also it is cultivated, and there is no such thing as education before the understanding is ripe for instruction.

As to the maxims of Julia, which you think opposite to this doctrine, I see nothing in them contradictory to it: on the contrary, I find them, for my own part, perfectly compatible. Every man at his birth, brings into the world with him a genius, talents, and character, peculiar to himself. Those, who are destined to live a life
of

of simplicity in the country, have no need to display their talents in order to be happy: their unexerted faculties are like the gold mines of the Valais, which the public good will not permit to be opened. But in a more polished society, where the head is of more use than the hands, it is necessary that all the talents nature hath bestowed on men should be exerted; that they should be directed to that quarter, in which they can proceed the farthest; and above all, that their natural propensity should be encouraged by every thing which can make it useful. In the first case, the good of the species only is consulted; every one acts in the same manner; example is their only rule of action; habit their only talent; and no one exerts any other genius than that which is common to all: whereas in the second case we consult the interest and capacity of individuals; if one man possesses any talent superior to another, it is cultivated and pursued as far as it will reach; and if a man be possessed of adequate abilities, he may become the greatest of his species. These maxims are so little contradictory, that they have been put in practice in all ages. Instruct not therefore the children of the peasant, nor of the citizen, for you know not as yet what instruction is proper for them. In every case let the body be formed, till the judgment begins to appear: then is the time for cultivation.

All this would seem very well, said I, if I did not see one inconvenience, very prejudicial to the advantages you promise yourself from this method; and this is, that children, thus left to themselves, will get many bad habits, which
can

can be prevented only by teaching them good ones. You may see such children readily contract all the bad practices they perceive in others, because such examples are easily followed; and never imitate the good ones, which would cost them more trouble. Accustomed to have every thing, and to do as they please on every occasion, they become mutinous, obstinate, and untractable.—But, interrupted Mr Wolmar, it appears to me that you have remarked the contrary in ours, and that this remark has given rise to this conversation. I must confess, answered I, this is the very thing which surprises me. What can Julia have done to make them so tractable? What method hath she taken to bring it about? What has she substituted instead of the yoke of discipline? A yoke much more inflexible, returned he immediately, that of necessity; but, in giving you an account of her conduct, you will be better able to comprehend her views. He then engaged Julia to explain her method of education; which, after a short pause, she did in the following manner.

“ Happy, my dear friend, are those who are well-born! I lay not so great a stress as Mr Wolmar does on my own endeavours. Notwithstanding his maxims, I doubt much if a good man can ever be made out of a child of a bad disposition and character. Convinced, nevertheless, of the excellence of his method, I endeavoured to regulate my conduct, in the government of my family, in every respect agreeable to him. My first hope is, that I shall never have a child of a vicious disposition; my second, that I shall be able to educate those which
God

God has given me, under the direction of their father, in such a manner, that they may one day have the happiness of possessing his virtues. To this end I have endeavoured to adopt his rules by giving them a principle less philosophical, and more agreeable to maternal affection; namely, to make my children happy. This was the first prayer of my heart after I was a mother, and all the business of my life is to accomplish it. From the first time I held my eldest son in my arms, I have reflected that the state of infancy is almost a fourth part of the longest life; that men seldom pass through the other three-fourths; and that it is a piece of cruel prudence to make that first part uneasy, in order to secure the happiness of the rest, which may never come. I reflected, that during the weakness of infancy, nature had oppressed children in so many different ways, that it would be barbarous to add to that oppression the empire of our caprices, by depriving them of a liberty so very much confined, and which they were so little capable of abusing. I resolved, therefore, to lay mine under as little constraint as possible; to leave them to the free exertion of all their little powers; and to suppress in them none of the emotions of nature. By these means I have already gained two great advantages; the one, that of preventing their opening minds from knowing any thing of falsehood, vanity, anger, envy, and, in a word, of all those vices which are the consequences of subjection, and which one is obliged to have recourse to, when we would have children do what nature does not teach: the other is, that they are more at liberty

ty to grow and gather strength, by the continual exercise which instinct directs them to. Accustomed, like the children of peasants, to expose themselves to the heat and cold, they grow as hardy; are equally capable of bearing the inclemencies of the weather; and become more robust, as living more at their ease. This is the way to provide against the age of maturity, and the accidents of humanity. I have already told you, that I dislike that destructive pusillanimity, which, by dint of sollicitude and care, enervates a child, torments it by constant restraint, confines it by a thousand vain precautions, and, in short, exposes it during its whole life to those inevitable dangers it is thus protected from but for a moment; and thus, in order to avoid catching a few colds while children, men lay up for themselves consumptions, pleurisy, and a world of other diseases.

What makes children, left thus to themselves, acquire the ill habits you speak of, is that, not contented with their own liberty, they endeavour to command others; which is owing to the absurd indulgence of too many fond mothers, who are to be pleased only by indulging all the fantastical desires of their children. I flatter myself, my friend, that you have seen in mine nothing like the desire of command and authority, even over the lowest domestic; and that you have seen me countenance as little the false complaisance and ceremony used to them. It is in this point, that I think I have taken a new and more certain method to make my children at once free, easy, obliging, and tractable; and that on a principle the most simple in the world,

which is, by convincing them they are but children.

To consider the state of infancy in itself, is there a being in the universe more helpless or miserable, that lies more at the mercy of every thing about it, that has more need of pity and protection, than an infant? Does it not seem, that, on this account, the first noise which nature directs it to make, is that of crying and complaint? Does it not seem, that nature gives it an affecting and tender appearance, in order to engage every one, who approaches it, to assist its weakness, and relieve its wants? What, therefore, can be more offensive, or contrary to order, than to see a child pert and imperious, commanding every one about him, and assuming impudently the tone of a master over those who, should they abandon him, would leave him to perish? Or can any thing be more absurd than to see parents approve such behaviour, and encourage their children to tyrannise over their nurses, till they are big enough to tyrannise over the parents themselves?

For my own part, I have spared no pains to prevent my son's acquiring the dangerous idea of command and servitude, and have never given him room to think himself attended more out of duty than pity. This point is, perhaps, the most difficult and important in education; nor can I well explain it, without entering into all those precautions which I have been obliged to take, to suppress in him that instinctive knowledge, which is so ready to distinguish the mercenary service of domestics from the tenderness of maternal solicitude.

: One of my principal methods has been, as I have just observed, to convince him of the impossibility of his subsisting, at his age, without our assistance. After which I had no great difficulty to shew him, that, in receiving assistance from others, we lay ourselves under obligations to them, and are in a state of dependance; and that the servant have a real superiority over him, because he cannot do without them, while he, on the contrary, can do them no service; so that instead of being vain of their attendance, he looks upon it with a sort of humiliation, as a mark of his weakness, and ardently wishes for the time when he shall be big and strong enough to have the honour of serving himself."

These notions, I said, would be difficult to establish in families where the father and mother themselves are waited on like children; but in this, where every person has some employment allotted him, even from the master and mistress to the lowest domestic; where the intercourse between them apparently consists only of reciprocal services; I do not think it impossible. Nevertheless, I am at a loss to conceive how children, accustomed to have their real wants so readily satisfied, can be prevented from expecting the same gratification of their imaginary wants or humours; or how it is that they do not sometimes suffer from the humour of a servant, who may treat their real wants as imaginary ones.

"Oh, my friend, replied Mrs Wolmar, an ignorant woman may frighten herself at any thing, or nothing. But the real wants of children,

dren, as well as grown persons, are very few ; we ought rather to regard the duration of our ease than the gratifications of a single moment. Do you think, that a child, who lies under no restraint, can suffer so much from the humour of a governess, under the eye of its mother, as to hurt it ? You imagine inconveniences, which arise from vices already contracted, without reflecting that my care has been to prevent such vices from being contracted at all. Women naturally love children ; and no misunderstanding would arise between them, except from the desire of one to subject the other to their caprices. Now that cannot happen here, neither on the part of the child, of whom nothing is required, nor on that of the governess, whom the child has no notion of commanding. I have in this acted directly contrary to other mothers, who in appearance would have their children obey the domestics, and in reality require the servants to obey the children : here neither of them command nor obey ; but the child never meets with more complaisance, from any person, than he shews for them. Hence, perceiving that he has no authority over the people about him, he becomes tractable and obliging ; in seeking to gain the esteem of others, he contracts an affection for them in turn : this is the infallible effect of self-love ; and from this reciprocal affection arising from the notion of equality, naturally result those virtues, which are constantly preached to children, without any effect.

I have thought, that the most essential part in the education of children, and which is seldom regarded in the best families, is to make them

sen-

sensible of their inability, weakness and dependence, and, as my husband called it, the heavy yoke of that necessity which nature has imposed on our species; and that, not only in order to shew them how much is done to alleviate the burden of that yoke, but especially to instruct them betimes in what rank providence has placed them, that they may not presume too far above themselves, or be ignorant of the reciprocal duties of humanity.

Young people, who from their cradle have been brought up in ease and effeminacy, who have been caressed by every one, indulged in all their caprices, and have been used to obtain easily every thing they desired, enter upon the world with many impertinent prejudices; of which they are generally cured by frequent mortifications, affronts, and chagrin. Now I would willingly spare my children this second kind of education, by giving them at first a just notion of things. I had indeed once resolved to indulge my eldest son in every thing he wanted, from a persuasion that the first impulses of nature must be good and salutary: but I was not long in discovering, that children, conceiving from such treatment that they have a right to be obeyed, depart from a state of nature almost as soon as born; contracting our vices from our example, and theirs by our indiscretion. I saw, that if I indulged him in all his humours, they would only increase by such indulgence; that it was necessary to stop at some point, and that contradiction would be but the more mortifying, as he should be less accustomed to it: but that it might be less painful to him, I began to use

him to it by degrees; and in order to prevent his tears and lamentations, I made every denial irrecoverable. It is true, I contradict him as little as possible, and never without due consideration. Whatever is given or permitted him, is done unconditionally, and at the first instance; and in this we are indulgent enough: but he never gets any thing by importunity, neither his tears nor intreaties being of any effect. Of this he is now so well convinced, that he makes no use of them; he goes his way on the first word, and frets himself no more at seeing a box of sweetmeats taken away from him, than at seeing a bird fly away, which he would be glad to catch, there appearing to him the same impossibility of having the one as the other; and so far from beating the chairs and tables, that he dares not lift his hand against those who oppose him. In every thing that displeases him, he feels the weight of necessity, the effect of his own weakness, but never—excuse me a moment, says she, seeing I was going to reply; I foresee your objection, and will come to it presently.

The great cause of the ill humour of children, is the care which is taken either to quiet or to aggravate them. They will sometimes cry for an hour, for no other reason in the world than because they perceive we would not have them. So long as we take notice of their crying, so long have they a reason for continuing to cry; but they will soon give over of themselves, when they see no notice is taken of them: for, old or young, nobody loves to throw away his trouble. This is exactly the case with my eldest boy, who was once the most peevish little bawler, stunning the

the whole house with his cries ; whereas now you can hardly hear there is a child in the house. He cries, indeed, when he is in pain ; but then it is the voice of nature, which should never be restrained ; and he is again hushed as soon as ever the pain is over. For this reason I pay great attention to his tears, as I am certain he never sheds them for nothing : and hence I have gained the advantage of being certain when he is in pain, and when not ; when he is well, and when sick ; an advantage which is lost with those who cry out of mere humour, and only in order to be appeased. I must confess, however, that this management is not to be expected from nurses and governesses : for, as nothing is more tiresome than to hear a child cry, and as these good women think of nothing but the time present, they do not foresee, that by quieting it to-day, it will cry the more to-morrow. But what is still worse, this indulgence produces an obstinacy which is of more consequence as the child grows up. The very cause that makes it a squawler at three years of age, will make it stubborn and refractory at twelve, quarrelsome at twenty, imperious at thirty, and insupportable all its life.

I come now to your objection, added she, smiling. In every indulgence granted to children, they can easily see our desire to please them ; and therefore they should be taught to suppose we have reason for refusing or complying with their requests. This is another advantage gained by making use of authority, rather than persuasion, on every necessary occasion. For, as it is impossible they can always be blind to our motives,
it

it is natural for them to imagine that we have some reason for contradicting them of which they are ignorant. On the contrary, when we have once submitted to their judgment, they will pretend to judge of every thing ; and thus become cunning, deceitful, fruitful in shifts and chicanery, endeavouring to silence those who are weak enough to argue with them : for, when one is obliged to give them an account of things above their comprehension, they attribute the most prudent conduct to caprice, because they are incapable of understanding it. In a word, the only way to render children docile and capable of reasoning, is not to reason with them at all ; but to convince them, that it is above their childish capacities ; for they will always suppose the argument in their favour, unless you can give them good cause to think otherwise. They know very well that we are unwilling to displease them, when they are certain of our affection ; and children are seldom mistaken in this particular : therefore, if I deny any thing to my children, I never reason with them ; I never tell them why I do so or so ; but I endeavour, as much as possible, that they should find it out ; and that even after the affair is over. By these means they are accustomed to think that I never deny them any thing without a sufficient reason, though they cannot always perceive it.

On the same principle it is, that I never suffer my children to join in the conversation of grown persons, or foolishly imagine themselves upon an equality with them because they are permitted to prattle. I would have them give a short
and

and modest answer, when they are spoken to ; but never to speak of their own head, or ask impertinent questions of persons so much older than themselves, to whom they ought to shew more respect.

These, interrupted I, are very rigid rules, for so indulgent a mother as Julia. Pythagoras himself was not more severe with his disciples. You are not only afraid to treat them like men, but seem to be fearful lest they should too soon cease to be children. By what means can they acquire knowledge more certain and agreeably, than by asking questions of those who know better than themselves ? What would the Parisian ladies think of your maxims, whose children are never thought to prattle too much or too long ; they judge of their future understanding, by the nonsense and impertinence they utter when young ? That may not be amiss, Mr Wolmar will tell me, in a country where the merit of the people lies in chattering, and where a man has no business to think if he can but talk. But I cannot understand how Julia, who is so desirous of making the lives of her children happy, can reconcile that happiness with so much restraint ; nor amidst so much confinement, what becomes of the liberty with which she pretends to indulge them.

“ What ! (says she, with impatience,) do we restrain their liberty, by preventing them from trespassing on ours ? And cannot they be happy, truly, without a whole company’s sitting silent to admire their puerilities ? To prevent the growth of their vanity is a surer means to effect their happiness : for the vanity of mankind is
the

the source of their greatest misfortunes, and there is no person so great or so admired, whose vanity has not given him much more pain than pleasure *.

What can a child think of himself, when he sees a circle of sensible people listening to, admiring, and waiting impatiently for, his wit, and breaking out in raptures at every impertinent expression? Such false applause is enough to turn the head of a grown person; judge then what effect it must have upon that of a child. It is with the prattle of children, as with the predictions in the Almanac. It would be strange, if amidst such a number of idle words, chance did not now and then jumble some of them into sense. Imagine the effect which such flattering exclamations must have on a simple mother, already too much flattered by her own heart. Think not, however, that I am proof against this error, because I expose it. No, I see the fault, and yet am guilty of it. But, if I sometimes admire the repartees of my son, I do it at least in secret. He will not learn to become a vain prater, by hearing me applaud him; nor will flatterers have the pleasure, in making me repeat them, of laughing at my weakness.

I remember one day, having company, I went out to give some necessary orders, and on my return found four or five great blockheads busy at play with my boy; they came immediately to tell me, with great rapture, the many pretty things

* If there ever was a man upon earth made happy by his vanity, it is past a doubt that he was a fool.

things he had been saying to them, and with which they seemed quite charmed. Gentlemen, said I, coldly, I doubt not but you know how to make puppets say very fine things, but I hope my children will one day be mine, when they will be able to act and talk of themselves; I shall then be always glad to hear what they have said and done well. Seeing this manner of paying their court did not take, they since play with my children, but not as with Punchinello; and to say the truth, they are evidently better, since they have been less admired.

With regard to their asking questions, I do not forbid it indiscriminately. I am the first to desire them to ask softly, of their father or me, what they want to know. But I do not permit them to break in upon a serious conversation, to trouble every body with the first piece of impertinence that comes into their heads. The art of asking questions is not quite so easy as may be imagined. It is rather that of a master than of a scholar. The wise know and inquire, says the Indian proverb, but the ignorant know not even what to inquire after. For want of such previous instruction, children, when at liberty to ask questions as they please, never ask any but such as are frivolous and answer no purpose, or such difficult ones whose solution is beyond their comprehension. Thus, generally speaking, they learn more by the questions which are asked of them, than from those which they ask of others.

But if this method of permitting them to ask questions, were as useful as it is pretended to be, is not the first and most important science

to them, that of being modest and discreet? and is there any other that should be preferred to this? Of what use then is an unlimited freedom of speech to children, before the age at which it is proper for them to speak; or the right of impertinently obliging persons to answer their childish questions? These little chattering querists ask questions, not so much for the sake of instruction, as to engage one's notice. This indulgence, therefore, is not so much the way to instruct them, as to render them conceited and vain; an inconvenience much greater, in my opinion, than the advantage they gain by it: for ignorance will by degrees diminish, but vanity will always increase.

The worst consequence that can arise from too long a reserve, will be, that my son when he comes to years of discretion, will be less fluent in speech, and may want that volubility of tongue, and multiplicity of words, which he might otherwise have acquired: but when we consider how much the custom of passing away life in idle prattle impoverishes the understanding, this happy sterility of words appears rather an advantage than otherwise. Shall the organ of truth, the most worthy organ of man, the only one whose use distinguishes him from the brutes, shall this be prostituted to no better purposes than those, which are answered as well by the inarticulate sounds of other animals? He degrades himself even below them, when he speaks and says nothing; a man should preserve his dignity, as such, even in his lightest amusements. If it be thought polite to stun the company with idle prate, I think it a much greater instance of true po-

politeness to let others speak before us; to pay a greater deference to what is said, than to what we say ourselves; and to let them see we respect them too much, to think they can be entertained by our nonsense. The good opinion of the world, that which makes us courted and caressed by others, is not obtained so much by displaying our own talents, as by giving others an opportunity of displaying theirs, and by placing our own modesty as a foil to their vanity. You need not be afraid that a man of sense, who is silent only from reserve and discretion, should ever be taken for a fool. It is impossible in any country whatever, that a man should be characterised by what he has not said, or that he should be despised for being silent. On the contrary, it may be generally observed, that people of few words impose silence on others, who pay an extraordinary attention to what they say, which gives them every advantage of conversation. It is so difficult for the most sensible man to retain his presence of mind during the hurry of a long discourse, so seldom that something does not escape him which he afterwards repents of, that it is no wonder if he sometimes chuses to suppress what is pertinent, to avoid the risque of talking nonsense.

But there is a wide difference between six years of age and twenty: my son will not be always a child, and in proportion as his understanding ripens, his father designs it shall be exercised. As to my part, my task does not extend so far. I may nurse children, but I have not the presumption to think of making them men. I hope, says she, looking at her husband,

this will be the employment of more able heads. I am a woman and a mother, and know my place and my duty; hence, I say again, it is not my duty to educate my sons, but to prepare them for being educated.

In this I do no more than pursue the system of Mr Wolmar, in every particular; which, the farther I proceed, the more reason I find to pronounce excellent and just. Observe my children, particularly the eldest; have you ever seen children more happy, more chearful, or less troublesome? You see them jump and laugh and run about all day, without incommoding any one. What pleasure, what independence, is their age capable of, which they do not enjoy, or which they abuse? They are under as little restraint in my presence, as when I am absent. On the contrary, they seem always at more liberty under the eye of their mother, than elsewhere; and, though I am the author of all the severity they undergo, they find me always more indulgent than any body else: for I cannot support the thought of their not loving me better than any other person in the world.

The only rules imposed on them in our company, are those of liberty itself, viz. they must lay the company under no greater restraint than they themselves are under; they must not cry louder than we talk; and as they are not obliged to concern themselves with us, they are not to expect we should concern ourselves with them. Now, if ever they trespass against such equitable rules as these, all their punishment is, to be immediately sent away; and I make this a punishment, by contriving to render every other place

place disagreeable to them. Setting this restriction aside, they are, in a manner, quite unrestrained; we never oblige them to learn any thing; never tire them with fruitless corrections; never reprimand them with trifles; the only lessons which are given them being those of practice. Every person in the house, having my directions, is so discreet and careful in this business, that they leave me nothing to wish for: and, if any defect should arise, my own assiduity would easily repair it.

Yesterday, for example, the eldest boy, having taken a drum from his brother, set him a-crying. Fanny said nothing to him, at the time; but about an hour after, when she saw him in the height of his amusement, she in her turn took it from him, which set him a-crying also. Upon this she said to him, "You took it just now, by force, from your brother, and now I take it from you; what have you to complain of? am not I stronger than you?" She then began to beat the drum, as if she took pleasure in it. So far all went well, till some time after, she was going to give the drum to the younger, but I prevented her, as this was not acting naturally, and might create envy between the brothers. In losing the drum, the youngest submitted to the hard law of necessity; the elder, in having it taken from him, was sensible of his injustice: both knew their own weakness, and were in a moment reconciled."

A plan so new, and so contrary to received opinions, at first surpris'd me. By dint of explanation, however, they at length represented it in so admirable a light, that I was made sen-

fible, that the path of nature is the best. The only inconvenience I find in this method, and which appeared to me very great, was to neglect the only faculty which children possess in perfection, and which is only debilitated by their growing into years. Methinks, according to their own system of education, that the weaker the understanding, the more one ought to exercise and strengthen the memory, which is then so proper to be exercised. It is that, said I, which ought to supply the place of reason. The mind becomes heavy and dull by inaction. The seed takes no root in a soil badly prepared; and it is a strange manner of preparing children to become reasonable, by beginning to make them stupid. How! stupid! cried Mrs Wolmar immediately. Do you confound two qualities so different, and almost contrary, as memory and judgment *? As if an ill-digested and unconnected lumber of things, in a weak head, did not do more harm than good to the understanding. I confess, that, of all the faculties of the human mind, the memory is the first which opens itself, and is the most convenient to be cultivated in children: but which, in your opinion, should be preferred, that which is most easy for them to learn, or that which is most important for them to know?

Consider the use which is generally made of this aptitude, the eternal constraint to which they are subject in order to display their memory;

* Here appears to be some little mistake. Nothing is so useful to the judgment as memory: it is true, however, that it is not the remembrance of words.

ry; and then compare its utility to what they are made to suffer. Why should a child be compelled to study languages he will never talk, and that even before he has learnt his own tongue? Why should he be forced incessantly to make and repeat verses he does not understand, and whose harmony all lies at the end of his fingers; or, be perplexed to death with circles and triangles, of which he has no idea; or why burdened with an infinity of names of towns, and rivers, which he constantly mistakes, and learns a-new every day? Is this to cultivate the memory to the improvement of the understanding, or is all such frivolous acquisition worth one of those many tears it costs him.

If all this, however, were merely useless, I should not so much complain of it; but is it not pernicious to accustom a child to be satisfied with mere words? Must not such a heap of crude and indigested terms and notions be injurious to the formation of those primary ideas with which the human understanding ought first to be furnished? And would it not be better to have no memory at all, than to have it stuffed with such a heap of literary lumber, to the exclusion of necessary knowledge?

If nature has given to the brain of children that softness of texture, which renders it proper to receive every impression, it is not proper for us to imprint the names of sovereigns, dates, terms of art, and other words of no meaning to them while young, nor of any use to them as they grow old: but it is our duty to trace out betimes all those ideas which are relative to the state and condition of humanity, those which

relate to their duty and happiness, that they may serve to conduct them through life in a manner agreeable to their being and faculties.

The memory of a child may be exercised without poring over books. Every thing he sees, every thing he hears, catches his attention, and is stored up in his memory: he keeps a journal of the actions and conversation of men, and from every scene that presents itself, deduces something to enrich his memory. It is in the choice of objects, in the care to shew him such only as he ought to know, and to hide from him those of which he ought to be ignorant, that the true art of cultivating the memory consists.

Think not, however, continued Julia, that we entirely neglect that care on which you think so much depends. A mother, if she is the least vigilant, holds in her hands the reins over the passions of her children. There are ways and means to excite in them a desire of instruction; and so far as they are compatible with the freedom of the child, and tend not to sow in them the seeds of vice, I readily employ them, without being chagrined, if they are not attended with success: for there is always time enough for knowledge, but not a moment should be lost in forming the disposition. Mr Wolmar lays, indeed, so great a stress on the first dawns of reason, that he maintains, though his son should be totally ignorant at twelve years old, he might know not a whit the less at fifteen; without considering that nothing is less necessary than for a man to be a scholar, and nothing more so than for him to be just and prudent.

You know that our eldest son reads already
tole-

tolerably well. I will tell you how he became fond of it: I had formed a design to repeat to him, from time to time, some fable out of La Fontaine; and had already begun, when he asked me one day, seriously, if ravens could talk? I saw immediately the difficulty of making him sensible of the difference between fable and falsehood; and laying aside La Fontaine, got off as well as I could, being from that moment convinced that fables were only proper for grown persons, and that simple truth only should be repeated to children. In the room of La Fontaine, therefore, I substituted a collection of little interesting and instructive histories, taken mostly from the Bible; and, finding he grew attentive to the tales, I composed others as entertaining as possible, and applicable to present circumstances. These I wrote out fair, in a fine book ornamented with prints, which I kept locked up, except at the times of reading. I read also but seldom, and never long at a time, repeating often the same story, and commenting a little, before I passed on to another. When I observed him particularly intent, I pretended to recollect some orders necessary to be given, and left the story unfinished just in the most interesting part, laying the book down negligently, and leaving it behind me. I was no sooner gone than he would take it up, and go to his Fanny or somebody else, begging them to read the remainder of the tale: but as nobody was at his command, and every one had his instructions, he was frequently refused. One would give him a flat denial, another had something else ado, a third muttered it out very low and badly, and a fourth would

would leave it in the middle, just as I had done before. When we saw him heartily wearied out with so much dependance, somebody intimated to him to learn to read himself, and then he need not ask any body, but might turn it over at pleasure. He was greatly delighted with the scheme, but where should he find any one obliging enough to instruct him? This was a new difficulty, which we took care, however, not to make too great. In spite of this precaution, he was tired out three or four times; but of this I took no other notice, than to endeavour to make my little histories the more amusing, which brought him again to the charge with so much ardour, that though it is not six months since he began to learn, he will be very soon able of himself to read the whole collection.

It is thus I endeavour to excite his zeal and inclination to attain such knowledge as requires application and patience: but though he learns to read, he gets no such knowledge from books; for there is no such in the books he reads, nor is the application to it at all proper for children. I am desirous also of furnishing their heads with ideas, and not with words; for which reason I never set them to get any thing by heart.

Never? said I, interrupting her; that is saying a great deal. Surely you have taught him his prayers and his catechism! There you are mistaken, replied she. As to the article of prayers, I say mine every morning and evening, aloud in the nursery; which is sufficient to teach them, without obliging them to learn. As to their catechism, they know not what it is.

What,

What, Julia! your children never learn their catechism? No, my friend, my children do not learn their catechism. Indeed! said I, quite surpris'd, so pious a mother!—I really do not comprehend you. Pray what is the reason they do not learn it? The reason is, said she, that I would have them some time or other believe it: I would have them be Christians. I understand you, said I; you would not have their faith consist in mere words? you would have them believe, as well as know, the articles of their religion; and you judge very prudently that it is impossible for a man to believe what he does not understand. You are very difficult, said Mr Wolmar, smiling; pray, were you a Christian by chance? I endeavour to be one, answered I, resolutely. I believe all that I understand of the Christian religion, and respect the rest, without rejecting it. Julia made me a sign of approbation, and we resumed the former subject of conversation.

After explaining herself on several other subjects, and convincing me of her active and indefatigable maternal zeal, she concluded by observing, that her method exactly answered the two objects she propos'd, namely, the permitting the natural disposition and character of her children to discover themselves, and empowering herself to study and examine it. They lie under no manner of restraint, continued she, and yet cannot abuse their liberty. Their disposition can neither be depraved nor perverted; their bodies are left to grow, and their judgments to ripen at ease and leisure: subjection debases not their minds, nor does flattery excite
their

their self-love; they think themselves neither powerful men nor inflaved animals, but children, happy and free. To guard them from vices not in their nature, they have, in my opinion, a better preservative than lectures, which they would not understand, or of which they would soon be tired. This consists in the good behaviour of those about them; in the good conversation they hear, which is so natural to them all, that they stand in no need of instruction; it consists in the peace and unity of which they are witnesses; in the harmony which is constantly observed, and in the conduct and conversation of every one around them.

Brought up hitherto in natural simplicity, whence should they derive those vices, of which they have never seen the example? whence those passions they have no opportunity to feel, those prejudices which nothing they observe can impress? You see they betray no bad inclination: they have adopted no erroneous notions. Their ignorance is not opinionated; their desires are not obstinate; their propensity to evil is prevented; nature is justified; and every thing serves to convince me, that the faults we accuse her of, belong not to her, but to ourselves.

Thus given up to the indulgence of their own inclinations without disguise or alteration, our children do not take an external and artificial form, but preserve exactly that of their original character. Thus it is that their character daily unfolds itself to observation, and gives us an opportunity to study the workings of nature, even to her most secret principles. Sure of never being reprimanded or punished, they are ignorant
of

of lying, or concealing any thing from us; and in whatever they say, whether before us or among themselves, they discover without restraint whatever lies at the bottom of their hearts. Being left at full liberty to prattle all day long to each other, they are under no restraint before me. I never check them, enjoin them to silence, or indeed pretend to take notice of what they say, while they talk sometimes very blameably, though I seem to know nothing of the matter. At the same time, however, I listen to them with attention, and keep an exact account of all they say and do; for these are the natural productions of the soil which we are to cultivate. A naughty word in their mouths is a plant or seed foreign to the soil, sown by the vagrant wind: should I cut it off by a reprimand, it would not fail ere long to shoot forth again. Instead of that, therefore, I look carefully to find its root, and pluck it up. I am only, said she, smiling, the servant of the gardener; I only weed the garden, by taking away the vicious plants; it is for him to cultivate the good ones.

It must be acknowledged also, that with all the pains I may take, I ought to be well seconded to succeed, and that such success depends on a concurrence of circumstances, which is perhaps to be met with nowhere but here. The knowledge and discretion of a sensible father are required, to distinguish and point out, in the midst of established prejudices, the true art of governing children from the time of their birth; his patience is required to carry it into execution, without ever contradicting his precepts by
his

his practice; it is necessary that one's children should be happy in their birth, and that nature should have made them amiable; it is necessary to have none but sensible and well-disposed servants about one, who will not fail to enter into the design of their master. One brutal or servile domestic would be enough to spoil all. In short, when one thinks how many adventitious circumstances may injure the best designs, and spoil the best concerted projects, one ought to be thankful to Providence for every thing that succeeds, and to confess that wisdom depends greatly on good fortune. Say rather, replied I, that good fortune depends on prudence. Do not you see that the concurrence of circumstances, on which you felicitate yourself, is your own doing, and that every one who approaches you is, in a manner compelled to resemble you? O ye mothers of families! when you complain that your views, your endeavours, are not seconded, how little do you know your own power! Be but what you ought, and you will surmount all obstacles; you will oblige every one about you to discharge their duty, if you but discharge yours. Are not your rights those of nature? In spite of the maxims or practices of vice, these will be always respected by the human heart. Do you but aspire to be women and mothers, and the most gentle empire on earth will be also the most respectable.

In the close of our conversation Julia remarked, that her task was become much easier since the arrival of Harriot. It is certain, said she, I should have had less trouble if I would have excited a spirit of emulation between the brothers.

But

But this step appeared to me too dangerous; I chose, therefore, rather to take more pains, and to run less risque. Harriot has made up for this; for, being of a different sex, their elder, fondly beloved by both, and very sensible for her age, I make a kind of governess of her, and with the more success, as her lessons are less suspected to be such.

With regard to herself, her education falls under my care; but the principles on which I proceed are so different, as to deserve particular explanation. Thus much at least I can say of her already, that it will be difficult to improve on the talents nature has given her, and that her merit is equal to her mother's, if her mother could possibly have an equal.

My Lord, as we now expect you every day here, this should be my last letter. But I understand the reason of your stay with the army, and tremble for the consequence. Julia is no less uneasy, and desires you will oftener let her hear from you; conjuring you, at the same time, to think how much you endanger the peace of your friends, by exposing your person. For my part, I have nothing to say to you on this subject. Discharge your duty; the advice of pusillanimity is as foreign from my heart as from yours. My dear B——, I know too well, that the only catastrophe worthy of you, is, to lose your life in the service and for the honour of your country; but ought you not to give some account of your days to him, who has preserved his only for your sake?

LETTER CXL.

From Lord B——.

IT appears, by your two last letters, that a former one is missing, apparently the first you directed to me at the army, and in which you accounted for Mrs Wolmar's secret uneasiness. Not having received that letter, I imagine it was in the mail of one of our couriers, who was taken; you will, therefore, be pleased to re-communicate its contents. I am at a loss to conjecture what they were, and am uneasy about them. For again, I ask, if happiness and peace dwell not in Julia's mind, where will they find an asylum on earth.

You may make her easy, as to the dangers she imagines we are here exposed to; we have to do with an enemy too expert to suffer us to pursue him. With a handful of men, he baffles our attempts, and deprives us of all opportunity to attack him. As we are very sanguine, however, we may probably raise difficulties which the best generals would not be able to surmount, and at length oblige the French to fight us. I foresee our first success will cost us dear, and that the victory we gained at Dettin-gen will make us lose one in Flanders. We make head against a very able commander. Nor is this all; he possesses the love and confidence of his troops, and the French soldiers, when they have a good opinion of their leader, are *invincible*. On the contrary, they are good for so little when they are commanded by courtiers they despise,

despise, that frequently their enemies need only to watch the intrigues of the cabinet, and seize a proper opportunity, to vanquish with certainty the bravest people on the continent: this they very well know. The duke of Marlborough, taking notice of the good look and martial air of a French soldier, taken prisoner at the battle of Blenheim, told him, if the French army had been composed of fifty thousand such men as he, it would not have been so easily beaten: Zounds, Sir, replied the grenadier, there are men enough in it like me, but it wants such a man as you. Now such a man at present commands the French troops, and is on our side wanting; but we have courage, and trouble ourselves little about that.

At all events, however, I intend to see their operations for the remainder of the campaign, and am resolved not to leave the army till it goes into winter-quarters. We shall all be gainers by such a delay, the season being too far advanced for us to think of crossing the mountains this year. I shall spend the winter with you, and not go to Italy until the beginning of the spring. Tell Mr and Mrs Wolmar, I have thus changed my design, that I may have more time to contemplate that affecting picture you so pathetically describe, and that I may have also the opportunity to see Mrs Orbe settled with them. Continue, my dear friend, to write with your usual punctuality, and you will do me a greater pleasure than ever: my equipage having been taken by the enemy, I have no books; but your letters supply me with amusement.

LETTER CXLI.

To Lord B——.

WHAT pleasure does your Lordship give me in acquainting me with your design of passing the winter with us at Clarens! but how dearly you make me pay for it by prolonging your stay at the army! What displeases me most, however, is to perceive that your resolution of making a campaign was fixed before we parted, though you mentioned nothing of it to me. I see, my Lord, your reason for keeping it a secret, and cannot be pleased with you for it. Did you despise me so much as to think me unfit to accompany you? or have you ever known me mean enough to be attached to any thing I should prefer to the honour of dying with my friend? But if it was improper for me to follow you to the army, you should at least have left me in London, which would have displeased me less than your sending me hither.

It is plain, by your last letter, that one of mine is indeed missing; the loss of which must have rendered the two succeeding ones in many respects obscure; but the necessary explanations to make them intelligible, shall be soon transmitted to you. What is at present more particularly needful, is to remove your inquietude concerning Mrs Wolmar's secret uneasiness.

I shall not pretend to give you a regular continuation of the discourse we had together after the departure of her husband. Many things have passed since that time which make me forget

get great part of it; and it was resumed at so many different times during his absence, that I shall content myself, to avoid repetition, with giving you a summary of the whole.

In the first place, then, she informed me, that Mr Wolmar, who neglected nothing in his power to make her happy, was nevertheless the sole author of all her disquietude; and that the more sincere their mutual attachment grew, the greater was her affliction. Would you think it, my Lord? This gentleman so prudent, so reasonable, so little addicted to any kind of vice, so little subject to the tyranny of human passions, knows nothing of that faith which gives virtue all its merit; and in the innocence of an irreproachable life, feels only at the bottom of his heart the dreadful tranquillity of the unbeliever. The reflection which arises from this contrast, in principle and morals, serves but to aggravate Julia's grief; she would think him even less culpable in disregarding the author of his being, had he more reason to dread his anger, or presumption to brave his power. That the guilty should be led to appease their consciences at the expence of truth; that the pride of thinking differently from the vulgar may induce others to embrace error, she can readily conceive; but, continued she, sighing, how a man so virtuous, and so little vain of his understanding, should be an infidel, surpasses my conception!

But before I proceed farther, it will be necessary to inform you of the peculiar character of this married couple. You are to conceive them as living solely for each other, and constantly taken up with their family; it being necessary

to know the strictness of the union subsisting between them, to comprehend how their difference of sentiments, in this one article, is capable of disturbing it. Mr Wolmar, educated in the customs of the Greek church, was not one of those who could support the absurdity of such ridiculous worship. His understanding, superior to the feeble yoke imposed on it, soon shook it off with contempt; rejecting, at the same time, every thing offered to his belief on such doubtful authority; thus forced in a manner into impiety, he degenerates into atheism.

Having resided ever since in Roman-catholic countries, he has never been induced to a better opinion of Christianity, by what he found professed there. Their religion, he saw, tended only to the interest of their priests; that it consisted entirely of ridiculous grimaces, and a jargon of words without meaning. He perceived that men of sense and probity were unanimously of his opinion, and that they did not scruple to say so; nay, that the clergy themselves, under the rose, ridiculed in private what they inculcated and taught in public; hence he has often assured me, that, after having taken much time and pains in the search, he never met with above three priests in his life that believed a God*.

By

* God forbid, that I should give sanction to assertions so rash and severe: I insinuate only, that there are people who make such assertions; and for whose indiscretion, the conduct of the clergy in every country and of all religions, often give but too much occasion. So far am I, however, from intending meanly to screen myself by this note, that my real opinion on this subject is, that no true believer can be a persecutor and

By endeavouring to set himself to rights in these matters, he afterwards bewildered himself in metaphysical inquiries; and seeing only doubts and contradictions offer themselves on every side, advanced so far, that, when he returned to the doctrines of Christianity, he came too late, and incapable of either belief or conviction, the best arguments appeared to him inconclusive. He finished his career, therefore, by equally opposing all religious tenets whatever; and was converted from atheism only to become a sceptic.

Such is the husband which heaven has destined to Julia; to her whose true faith and sincere piety cannot have escaped your observation; but to know how much her gentle soul is naturally inclined to devotion, requires that long intimacy with her in which her cousin and I have lived. It might be said, no terrestrial object being equal to her tenderness, her excess of sensibility is obliged to ascend to its source: not like a faint Theresa, whose amorous heart only changes its object: her's is a heart truly inexhaustible, which neither love nor friendship can drain; but whose affections are still raised to the only Being, worthy her ardent love *. Her love to God does not detach her from his creatures;

an enemy to toleration. If I were a magistrate, and the law inflicted death on atheists, I would begin to put it in execution, by burning the first man that should come to accuse and prosecute another.

* How! Will the Deity take up with only the refuse of his creatures? Not so; all the love the human heart can possess for created beings is so little, that when they think it is replete, it is yet vacant; an infinite object only can possess it entirely.

tures ; it gives her neither severity nor spleen. But all her affections, proceeding from the same cause, and tempering each other, become more sweet and attracting ; she would, I believe, be less devout, if her love toward her husband, her children, her cousin, and me, were less than it is.

What is very singular also is, that she knows but little of her own heart ; and even complains that she finds in herself, a soul barren of tenderness and incapable of love to the sublimest object.—“ Do what you will, she often says, the heart is affected only by the interposition of the senses, or the assistance of the imagination ; and how shall we see or imagine the immensity of the Supreme Being * ? When I would raise myself up to the Deity, I know no longer where I am ; perceiving no relation between us, I know not how to reach him, I neither see nor feel any thing, I drop into a kind of annihilation ; and, if I may venture to judge of others by myself, I should apprehend the ecstasies of the mystics are no less owing to the fulness of the heart than the emptiness of the head.”

“ What must I do then, added she, to get rid of these delusions of a wandering mind ? I
sub-

* It is certain, the mind must be fatigued by the unequal task of contemplating the Deity. Such ideas are too sublime for the vulgar, who require a more sensible object of devotion. Are the Catholics to blame, then, in filling their legends, their calendars, and their churches, with little angels, cherubs, and handsome saints ? The infant Jesus, in the arms of his modest and beautiful mother, is one of the most affecting, and, at the same time, the most agreeable spectacles that Christian devotion can present to the view of the faithful.

substitute a less refined worship, but within the reach of my comprehension, in the room of those sublime contemplations which surpass my mental faculties. With regret I debase the majesty of the Divinity, and interpose perceptible objects between the Deity and my feeble senses; not being able to contemplate his essence, I contemplate at least his works, and admire his goodness; but whatever method I take, instead of that pure love and affection he demands, it is only an interested gratitude I have to offer him."

Thus, every thing is productive of sentiment in a susceptible mind; the whole universe presenting to Julia nothing but what is a subject for love and gratitude. On every side she sees and adores the benevolent hand of providence; her children are pledges committed by it to her care; she receives its gifts in the produce of the earth; she sees her table covered by its bounty; she sleeps under its protection; she awakes in peace under its care; she is instructed by its chastisements, is made happy by its favours: all the benefits she reaps, all the blessings she enjoys, are so many different subjects for adoration and praise. If the attributes of the Divinity are beyond her feeble sight, she sees in every part of the creation, the common Father of mankind. To honour thus the supreme benevolence, is it not to serve as much as possible an infinite Being?

Imagine, my Lord, what pain it must give a woman of such a disposition, to spend a life of retirement with a man who, while he forms a part of her existence, cannot partake of that
hope

hope which makes her existence dear; not to be able to join him in praise and gratitude to the Deity, nor to converse with him on the blessed futurity we have to hope from his goodness! to see him insensible, in doing good, to every thing which should make virtue agreeable to us; and, with the strangest absurdity, thinking like an infidel and acting as a Christian. Imagine her walking abroad with her husband; the one admiring, in the beautiful verdure of spring, or golden fruits of autumn, the power and beneficence of the great Creator of all things; the other seeing in them nothing but a fortuitous combination of atoms, united only by chance. Imagine to yourself the situation of a married couple, having a sincere regard for each other, who, for fear of giving offence, dare not indulge themselves in such sentiments or reflections as the objects around them inspire; but who are bound in duty, even from their reciprocal affections, to lay themselves under continual restraint. Julia and I hardly ever walk out together, but some striking or picturesque object puts her in mind of this disagreeable circumstance. Alas! said she with great emotion to me one day, this beautiful prospect before us, so lively, so animating in our eyes, is a dead and lifeless scene in those of the unfortunate Wolmar. In all that harmony of created beings which nature displays, in vain do they unite to speak their Maker's praise: Mr Wolmar perceives only a profound and eternal silence.

You who know Julia, who know what delight her communicative mind takes in imparting its sentiments; think what she must suffer
by

by such constraint, even though it were attended with no other inconvenience, than that unsocial reserve which is peculiarly disagreeable between two persons so intimately connected. But Julia has much greater cause of uneasiness. In vain does she oppose those involuntary terrors, those dreadful ideas that rush upon her mind. They return with redoubled force, and disturb every moment of her life. How horrid must it be for such an affectionate wife to think the supreme Being is the avenger of his offended attributes! to think the happiness of him on whom her own depends must end with his life; and to behold a reprobate of God in the father of her children! All her sweetness of disposition can hardly preserve her from falling into despair at this horrible idea; her religion only, which makes her feel for the infidelity of her husband, yielding her strength to support it. If heaven, says she sometimes, refuses me the conversion of this honest man, I have but one blessing to ask; which is, that I may die before him.

Such, my Lord, is the too just cause of Julia's chagrin; such is the secret affliction which preys on her mind, and is aggravated by the care she takes to conceal it. Atheism, which stalks abroad undisguised among the Papists, is obliged to hide its head in every country, where reason, giving a sanction to religion, deprives infidels of all excuse. Its principals are naturally destructive; and, though they find partizans among the rich and great, who promote them, they are held in the utmost horror by an oppressed and miserable people; who, seeing their tyrants thus freed from the only curb to restrain
their

their insolence, comfort themselves with the hope of another life, their only consolation in this. Mrs Wolmar, foreseeing the ill consequences of her husband's scepticism, and being desirous to preserve her children from the bad effects of so dangerous an example, prevailed on him to keep his principles a secret; to which she found no great trouble to persuade a man who, though honest and sincere, is yet discreet, unaffected, without vanity, and far from wishing to deprive others of a blessing which he himself cannot enjoy. In consequence of this, he keeps his tenets to himself; he goes to church with us; conforms himself to custom; and without making a verbal confession of what he does not believe, avoids giving scandal, and pays all that respect to the established religion of the country which the state has a right to demand of its citizens.

They have been married now almost eight years, during which time Mrs Orbe only has been in the secret; nor probably would she of herself ever have discovered it. Such care indeed is taken to save appearances, and with so little affectation, that, after having spent six weeks together in the greatest intimacy, I had not the least suspicion; and should perhaps never have known Mr Wolmar's sentiments on religious matters, if Julia herself had not apprised me of them.

Several motives determined her to that confidence: In the first place, a too great reserve would have been incompatible with the friendship that subsists between us. Again, it would be only aggravating her uneasiness at her own
cost

cost, to deny herself the consolation of sharing it with a friend. She was, besides, unwilling that my presence should be long an obstacle to the conversation they frequently held together on a subject she had so much at heart. In short, knowing you intended soon to join us here, she was desirous, with the consent of her husband, that you should be previously made acquainted with his sentiments; as she hopes to find from your prudence and abilities, a supplement to our hitherto fruitless efforts, worthy of your character.

The opportunity she laid hold of to place this confidence in me, made me suspect also another reason, which, however, she herself never insinuated. Her husband had just left us; we lived formerly together; our hearts had been enamoured of each other; they still remembered their former transports; had they now forgot themselves but for a moment, we had been plunged into guilt and infamy. I saw plainly she was fearful of our private conversations, and sought to prevent the consequences she feared; and I was myself too well convinced, by the remembrance of what happened at Meillerie, that they who confide least in themselves are the safest to be trusted.

Under these groundless apprehensions, which her natural timidity inspired, she conceived she could take no better precaution than always to have a witness to our conversation, whose presence could not fail of being respected; and to call in, as a third person, the awful and upright Judge, who searches the heart, and is privy to the most secret actions of men. Thus, com-

mitting herself to the immediate protection of the Divinity, I found the Deity always between us. What criminal desire could ever assail such a safeguard? my heart grew refined by her zeal, and I partook of her virtue.

These grave topics of discourse took up almost all our private conferences in the absence of her husband; and since his return, we have resumed them frequently in his presence. He attends to our conversation, as if he was not at all concerned; and, without despising our endeavours, sometimes advises us in our method of argument. It is this which makes me despair of success; for had he less sincerity, one might attack that vicious faculty of the mind that nourishes his infidelity; but, if we are to convince him by dint of reasoning, where shall we find information that has escaped his knowledge, or arguments that have eluded his sagacity? For my part, when I have undertaken to dispute with him, I have found that all mine had been before exhausted to no purpose by Julia; and that my reasoning fell far short of that pathetic eloquence which, dictated by the heart, flowed in persuasive accents from her tongue. I fear, my Lord, we shall never make a convert of this man. He is too frigid, not immoral; his passions are not to be moved; sensibility, that innate proof of the truth of religion, is wanting; and the want of this alone is enough to invalidate all others.

Notwithstanding Julia's care to disguise her uneasiness from him, he knows and partakes of it; his discernment will not permit him to be imposed on. His own chagrin therefore, on account

count of her's, is but too apparent. Hence he has been tempted several times to affect a change of sentiments; and, for the sake of Julia's peace, to adopt tenets he could not in fact believe: but his soul was above the meanness of hypocrisy. This dissimulation, instead of imposing on Julia, would only have afforded a new cause of sorrow. That sincerity, that frankness, that union of hearts, which now comfort them under their afflictions, would then have no more subsisted between them. Was it by making himself less worthy her esteem that he could hope to calm her fears? No, instead therefore of deceiving her, he tells her plainly his thoughts; but this he does in a manner so simple and unaffected, so little disdainful of received opinions, so unlike that ironical contemptuous behaviour of pretended free-thinkers, that such melancholy confessions are extremely afflicting. As she cannot, however, inspire her husband with that faith and hope with which she herself is animated, she studies with the more assiduity to indulge him in all those transient pleasures to which his happiness is confined. Alas! says she weeping, if the poor unfortunate has his heaven in this life, let us make it, at least, as agreeable to him as possible *!

That veil of sorrow, which this difference in opinion throws over their union, gives a farther

R 2

proof

* How much more natural is this humane sentiment, than the horrid zeal of persecutors, always employed in tormenting the unbeliever, as if, to damn him in this life, they themselves were the forerunners of the devils? I shall ever continue to repeat it, A persecutor of others cannot be a true believer himself.

proof of the irresistible ascendant of Julia, in the consolation with which that affliction is tempered, and which perhaps no other person in the world would be able to apply. All their altercations, all their disputes, on this important point, so far from giving rise to ill-nature, contempt, or anger, generally end in some affecting scene which the more endears them to each other.

Our conversation falling yesterday upon the same subject, as it frequently does when we three are by ourselves, we were led into a dispute concerning the origin of evil ; in which I endeavoured to prove, that no absolute or general evil existed in the system of nature ; but that even particular and relative evils were much less in reality, than in appearance ; and that, on the whole, they were more than recompensed by our particular and relative good. As an example of this, I appealed to Mr Wolmar himself, and, penetrated with a sense of the happiness of his situation, I described it so justly, and in such agreeable colours, that he seemed himself affected with the description. Such,' says he, interrupting me, ' are the delusive arguments of Julia : she always substitutes sentiment in the place of reason, and argues so affectingly, that I cannot help embracing her at every reply : ' Was it not her philosophical preceptor,' added he, smiling, ' that taught her this manner of reasoning ? ' Two months before, this piece of pleasantry would have cruelly disconcerted me ; but my first embarrassment was now over, and I joined in the laugh : nor did Julia, tho'

tho' she blushed a little, appear any more embarrassed than myself.

We continued the dispute. Wolmar, not contending about the quantity of evil, contented himself with observing, that, whether little or much, evil still existed; and thence inferred the want either of power, wisdom, or goodness, in the first cause. I, on my part, strove to deduce the origin of physical evil from the properties of matter, and of moral evil from the free agency of man. I advanced, that nothing was impossible to the Deity, except the creation of substances as perfect and exempt from evil as himself. We were in the heat of our dispute when I perceived Julia had left us. 'Can you guess whither she is gone?' said her husband, seeing me look around for her. 'I suppose, said I, to give some orders in her family.' 'No, replied he, she would not have left us at this time for that. Business of that kind is, I know not how, transacted without my ever seeing her interfere.' 'Then she is gone to the nursery?' 'No; her children are not more at her heart than my conversion.' 'Well then, said I, I know not what she is gone about; but I am well assured she is employed in some useful concern.' 'Still less, said he coldly; come, come along; you shall see if I guess right.'

He then stepped softly along the room, and I followed him in the same manner: when, coming to the door of Julia's closet, and finding it shut, he threw it suddenly open. Oh! my Lord! what a sight did this present us! Julia on her knees, her hands lifted up to heaven, and her

face bathed in tears ! she rose up precipitately, wiping her eyes, hiding her face, and trying to escape us : never did I see so affecting a confusion. Her husband did not give her time to get away ; but ran to her in a kind of transport ; ‘ Ah, my dear ! (said he embracing her,) even the fervency of your prayers betrays the weakness of your cause : what prevents their efficacy ? if your desires were heard, they would presently be granted.’ “ I doubt not, (said she,) with a devout confidence, but they will be granted ; how soon or late, I leave to heaven. Could I obtain it, at the expence of my life, I should lay it down with pleasure, and think the last the best employed of all my days.”

Come, my Lord, leave those scenes of destruction you are now engaged in, and act a nobler part. Can a philosopher prefer the honour of destroying mankind, to the virtue of endeavouring to save them * ?

L E T T E R CXLII.

To Lord B——.

WHAT ! a journey to Paris, after being absent from us a whole campaign ? Have you then, my Lord, entirely forgot Clarens, and its inhabitants ? Are we less dear to you than
Lord

* There is here a long letter wanting, from Lord E—— to Julia. It is mentioned in the sequel ; but, for particular reasons, I was obliged to suppress it.

Lord H——? or are you more necessary to that friend, than to those who expect you here? You oblige us to oppose our wishes to yours, and make me in particular lament that I have not interest enough at the court of France to prevent your obtaining the passports you wait for. But, no matter; go, visit your worthy countryman. In spite of you both, we will be revenged of you for the preference given him; for, whatever pleasure you may enjoy in his company, I know that, when you come to be with us, you will regret the time you staid away.

On receiving your letter, I at first suspected you were charged with some secret commission. If peace were in view, where could be found a more worthy mediator?—But when do kings put their confidence in men of worth? Dare they listen to truth? Do they know how to respect true merit? No, no, my dear Lord B——, you are not made for a minister of state; and I think too well of you to imagine, if you had not been born a peer, you would ever have risen to that dignity.

Come, my friend, you will be better at Clarendon than at court. What an agreeable winter shall we pass together, if the hope of seeing you here does not deceive me! Our happiness is every day preparing, by the arrival of one or other of those privileged minds, who are so dear to each other, so worthy of each other's esteem, and who seem only to wait for you to be able to live without all the rest of the world. On hearing what a lucky accident brought hither the baron's adversary, you foresaw the consequences of that rencounter; it has really fallen out as
you

you foretold. That old litigant, though almost as obstinate and inflexible as his opponent, could not resist the ascendant we got over him. After seeing and conversing with Julia, he began to be ashamed of contending with her father ; and he set out for Bern in so favourable a disposition, that we hear an accommodation is far advanced, and from the Baron's last letter expect his return home in a few days.

This you will already have been told by Mr Wolmar : but probably you do not yet know that Mrs Orbe, having settled her affairs, arrived here on Thursday last, and resides entirely at the house of her friend. As I knew beforehand the day of her arrival, I set out to meet her, unknown to Mrs Wolmar, whom she had a mind to surprise : we met on this side Lutri, and returned together.

She is now more sprightly and agreeable than ever ; but unequal, absent, giving little attention to any thing, and seldom replying ; talking by fits and starts ; in a word, given up entirely to that restlessness which is natural to us, when just on the point of obtaining what we have long ardently desired. One would have thought, every minute, that she was afraid of being obliged to return. Her journey, tho' so long deferred, was undertaken so precipitately, that it almost turned the heads of both mistress and domestics. A whimsical disorder appeared throughout the whole of her little baggage. If her woman imagined, as she did every now and then, that she had left something behind, Clara as constantly assured her she had put it into the seat of the pleasures. She has, besides great good sense,

an

the coach; where, upon further inquiry, it was not to be found.

Being unwilling that Julia should hear the rattling of her coach, she got out in the avenue before we came to the gate, skipped across the court-yard like a sylph, and ran up-stairs with so much precipitation that she was obliged to stop and take breath on the first landing-place, before she could get up the next flight. Mr Wolmer came out to meet her, but she was in too much hurry to speak to him. On opening the door of Julia's apartment, I saw her sitting near the window, with the little Harriot on her knee. Clara had prepared for her a fine compliment, in her way, a compound of affection and pleasantry; but, on setting her foot over the threshold, compliment and pleasantry were all forgotten; she flew forward to embrace her friend with a transport impossible to be described, crying out, Ah! my dear, dear cousin! Harriot, seeing her mother, fled to meet her, and crying out *Mama, Mama*, ran with so much force against her, that the poor child fell backwards on the floor. The effect of the sudden appearance of Clara, the fall of Harriot, the joy, the apprehensions, that seized upon Julia at that instant, made her give a violent shriek, and faint away. Clara was going to lift up the child when she saw her friend turn pale, which made her hesitate whom to assist; till seeing me take up Harriot, she flew to the relief of Julia; but, in endeavouring to recover her, sunk down likewise in the same state.

Harriot, seeing them both without motion, made such loud lamentations as soon brought the

the little Frenchwoman into the room ; the one clung about her mother, the other ran to her mistress. For my part, I was so struck, that I stalked about the room without knowing what I did, venting broken exclamations, and making involuntary motions to no purpose. Wolmar himself, the unsusceptible Wolmar, seemed affected. But where is the heart of iron whom such a scene of sensibility would not affect ? Where is the unfortunate mortal from whom such a scene of tenderness would not have extorted tears ? Instead of running to Julia, this fortunate husband threw himself on a settee, to enjoy the delightful scene. ‘ Be not afraid, (says he, seeing our uneasiness.) In these accidents nature only is exhausted for a moment, to recover itself with new vigour ; they are never dangerous. Let me prevail on you not to interrupt the pleasure I take in this transporting sight, but partake it with me. How ravishingly delightful must it be to you ? I never tasted any thing like it, and am yet the unhappiest person present.’

By this first scene, my Lord, at the moment of their meeting, you may judge the consequences of the reunion of these charming friends. It has excited throughout the whole house a sound of gladness, a tumultuous joy, that has not yet subsided. Julia was in such an agitation as I never saw her in before ; it was impossible for her to think of any thing all that day, but to gaze on her new visitor, and load her with fresh caresses. Nobody even thought of the saloon of Apollo ; there was no occasion for thinking of it when every place gave equal pleasure. We
were

were hardly, even the next day, composed enough to think of making an entertainment on the occasion. Had it not been for Wolmar, every thing would have gone wrong. In the mean time, every one was dressed in the best manner. No other care was admitted, than what tended to amusement. The entertainment was not grand, but extremely joyous; throughout the whole there reigned a pleasing confusion and disorder, which were its greatest embellishment.

The morning was spent in putting Mrs Orbe in possession of her employment of intendant or housekeeper, and she betrayed the same eagerness to enter in her office, as a child does after a new play-thing; at which we were highly diverted. In entering the saloon at dinner, both cousins were agreeably surprised to see on every side, their names in cypher, artificially formed with flowers. Julia guessed in an instant to whom she was obliged for that piece of ingenuity, and embraced me in a transport of joy. Clara, contrary to former custom, hesitated to follow her example; till Wolmar reprimanding her, she blushed, and embraced me. Her sweet confusion, which I observed but too plainly, had an effect on me which I cannot describe; but I could not feel myself in her arms without emotion.

In the afternoon a fine collation was set out in the gynecæum, or women's apartment; where for once Mr Wolmar and I were admitted, and were entertained agreeably. In the evening all the house, now increased by three persons, assembled to dance. Clara seemed ornamented by the
hands

hands of the Graces, never having appeared to so much advantage as on that day. She danced, she chatted, she laughed, she gave orders, she was capable of every thing. Having protested she would tire me out, she danced down five or six country-dances in a breath; and then reproached me for footing it with the gravity of a philosopher. I, on the other hand, told her she danced like a fairy; that she was full as mischievous, and that she would not let me rest night nor day. You shall see to the contrary, says she, here is that will set you to sleep presently: with that she started up, and led down another dance.

She was really indefatigable: but it was otherwise with Julia: she could hardly support herself: her knees trembled, as she danced; she was too much affected to be chearful. One might observe a tear of joy every now and then trickle from her eyes. She regarded her cousin with a kind of delicious transport; took a pleasure in conceiving herself the guest for whom the entertainment was made, and looked fondly upon Clara as the mistress of the house who entertained her.

After supper, I played off the fire-works I had brought from China, which had a pretty effect. We sat up great part of the night. At length it became time to break up: Mrs Orbe was tired, or had danced enough to be so, and Julia was desirous she should not sit up too late.

At length we became insensibly tranquil, and good order took place. Clara, giddy and inconsiderate as she seems, knows how to check her sallies, and put on an air of authority, when
she

an exquisite discernment, the penetration of Wolmar, and the goodness of Julia; and tho' extremely liberal, has a good deal of discretion in her generosity: for, though left so young a widow, and charged with the care of a daughter, the fortunes of both increase in her hands; so that there is no reason to apprehend the house will, under her direction, be less prudently governed than before. In the mean time, Julia has the satisfaction of devoting herself entirely to an occupation more agreeable to her taste; that is, the education of her children: and I doubt not but Harriot will profit greatly by one of her mothers having relieved the other. I say her mothers, because by the manner in which they both behave to her, it is difficult to distinguish which is really so; so that some strangers, who arrived here to-day, are still, or appear to be, in doubt about it. In fact, they both call her *Harriot*, or *my child*, indifferently. She calls the one her *Mama*, and the other her *little Mama*: she has the same love for both, and pays them equal obedience. If the ladies are asked whose child it is, each answers it is her's; if Harriot be questioned, she says that she has two mothers; so that it is no wonder people are puzzled. The most discerning, however, think her the child of Julia; Harriot, whose father was of a fair complexion, being fair like her, and something resembling her in features. A greater maternal tenderness appears also in the soft regards of Julia, than in the sprightlier looks of Clara. The child puts on also a more respectful air, and is more reserved in her behaviour, before the former. She places herself involun-

tarily oftener on the side of Julia, because she most frequently talks to her. It must be owned, all appearances are in favour of our *little mama*; and I observe the deception is so agreeable to the two cousins, that it may be sometimes perhaps intended.

In a fortnight, my Lord, nothing will be wanting here but your presence; and when you are arrived, I shall have a very bad opinion of that man who shall be tempted to ransack the world for a virtue, or a pleasure, which may not here be found.

L E T T E R CXLIII.

To Lord B——.

I HAVE attempted every evening, for these three days past, to write to you; but, thro' the fatigue of the day, I become too sleepy to effect my purpose at night, and in the morning I am again called upon early to my employment. A pleasing tranquillity, more intoxicating than wine, takes possession of my senses, and I cannot without regret bear a moment's avocation from the new and agreeable amusements which my present situation affords.

Indeed, I cannot conceive that I would be dissatisfied any where in such company; but do you know why Clarens in itself is agreeable? It is, that here I find myself actually in the country, which I could hardly ever say before. The inhabitants of cities know not how to enjoy the country;

country; they even know not what it is to be there; or, when there, are at a loss what to do with themselves. They are ignorant of all rustic business and amusements; they despise them; they seem at home as if they were in a foreign country, and I am not at all surpris'd that they are displeas'd with it. Among the country people we should live as they do, or not associate with them at all. The Parisians, who imagine they go into the country, mistake the thing; they carry Paris along with them. They are attended with their fingers, their wits, their authors, and their parasites. Cards, music, and plays, engross all their attention; their tables are spread in the same manner as at Paris; they sit down to their meals at the same hours; are served with the same dishes, and in the same pomp: in a word, they do just the same things in the country as they did in town, where, for that reason, it had been better they had stay'd; for, however opulent they are, or careful to omit nothing they are accustomed to, they always find something wanting, and perceive the impossibility of carrying the town altogether along with them. Thus, that variety they are so fond of, eludes their search; they are acquainted only with one manner of living, and are therefore in a continual listlessness.

Every rural employment to me affords something agreeable; nor is there any so painful and laborious, as to excite our compassion for the labourer. As the object of both public and private utility, agriculture is peculiarly interesting; and, as it was the first employment of man in his state of innocence, it fills the mind with the

most pleasing sensations, and affects us with the agreeable ideas of the golden age. The imagination cannot help being warmed by the prospects of seed-time and harvest: if we look around us, and see the fields covered with hay-makers, and with flocks of sheep, scattered at a distance, one is affected with a pleasure that rises insensibly. Thus sometimes the voice of nature softens our savage hearts, and, though its dictates are too often fruitless, it is so agreeable that we never hear it without pleasure.

It must be acknowledged, that the misery which appears on the face of some countries, where the taxes devour the produce of the earth, the eager avarice of a greedy collector, the inflexible rigour of an inhuman master, take away much of the beauty of the prospect. To see the poor jaded cattle ready to expire under the whip; to see the unhappy peasants themselves emaciated with fasting, clothed in rags, groaning with fatigue, and hardly secured from the inclemencies of the weather by their wretched huts; these are deplorable sights; and it makes one almost blush to be a man, when one thinks how the very vitals of such poor objects are drained to satisfy their cruel masters. But what pleasure is it, on the other hand, to see the prudent and humane proprietors, in milder governments, make the cultivation of their lands the instrument of their benevolence, their recreation, their pleasures! to see them with open hands distribute the bounties of Providence! to see their servants, their cattle, and every creature about them, fatten on the abundance that flows from their barns, their cellars and their granaries! to see them
fur-

surrounded with peace and plenty, and make, of the employment that enriches them, a perpetual feast! How is it possible for one to be inattentive to the agreeable illusions which such objects create? We forget the age we live in, and the vices of our contemporaries, and are transported in imagination to the patriarchal æra: we are desirous to set one's own hands to work; to join in the rustic employment, and partake of its attendant happiness. Oh! how delightful were the days of love and innocence, when the women were affectionate and modest, the men simple and content? Such were the days when a lover did not regret fourteen years of servitude to obtain his mistress. Fair daughter of Laban! keeper of thy father's flocks, how amiable must thou have been! how irresistible thy charms! No, never doth beauty exert its power so much as when in the midst of rural scenes and rustic simplicity. Here is the real seat of its empire; here she sits on her throne, surrounded by the Graces; adorned by whose hands, she captivates all beholders. Excuse this rhapsody, my Lord; I return now to my subject.

The autumnal heats have for this month past been preparing a favourable vintage, which the frost has already induced us to begin*; the parched leaves falling off the vines, and exposing to view the clustered grapes, whose juicy ripeness invites the hands of the gatherers. Vines loaded with the salutary fruit, which heaven be-

S 3

flows

* The vintage is very late in this country; because the principle crop is of white wines, to which the frost is of service.

flows on the unfortunate to solace all their woes; the sound of the casks, tubs, and tons, which they are hooping on every side; the songs of the gatherers with which the vintage re-echoes; the continual trotting backwards and forwards of those who carry the grapes to the press; the harsh din of the rustic instruments that animate the people to work; the agreeable and affecting picture of a general good humour, which seems to be extended at that time over the face of the whole earth; add to these the fog, which the sun exhales in a morning, and draws up like the curtain of a theatre, to display so delightful a scene; all conspire to give it the air of an entertainment; and that an entertainment which is the more pleasing on reflection, that it is the only one in which mankind have art enough to join utility with delight.

Mr Wolmar, who has one of the best vineyards in the country, has made all the necessary preparations for his vintage. His backs, his wine-press, his cellar, his casks, are all ready for that delicious liquor for which they are designed. Mrs Wolmar herself takes charge of the crop; the choice of the labourers, and the order and distribution of the several parts of the work falling to her share. Mrs Orbe takes care of all entertainments, and of the payment of the day-labourers, agreeable to the police established here, the laws of which are never broken or infringed. As to my part, I am set to inspect the press, and enforce the directions of Julia, who cannot bear the steam of the backs; and Clara did not fail to recommend me to this employ,

employ, as it is so well adapted, she says, to a toper.

Every one having thus an allotted task, we are all up early in the morning, and are assembled to go to the vineyard. Mrs Orbe, who never thinks herself sufficiently employed, undertakes further to observe and rate those who are idle; in doing which I can safely say, with respect to me at least, that she acquits herself with a malicious assiduity. As to the old baron, while we are all employed, he walks out with his gun, and comes every now and then to take me from my work to go with him a thrush-shooting; and I am taxed by my companions with being secretly engaged to him; so that by degrees I lose my old name of philosopher, and get that of an idler; appellations which in reality are not very different.

You see, by what I have told you of the baron, that we are quite reconciled, and that Wolmar has reason to be content with his second experiment *. Shall I hate the father of
my

* This will be better understood by the following extract of a letter from Julia, not inserted in this collection. "This, says Mr Wolmar, taking me aside, is the second proof I intended to put him to; if he had not paid great respect to your father, I should have mistrusted him. But, said I, how shall we reconcile that respect to the antipathy that subsists between them? It subsists no longer, replied he. Your father's prejudices have done St Preux all the harm they could; he has no farther reason to fear them; he is not angry at your father, but pities him. The baron, on his side, is no longer jealous of St Preux; he has a good heart; is sensible he has injured him, and is sorry for it. I see they will do very well together, and will for the future see each other with pleasure. From this moment, therefore, I shall put an entire confidence in him."

my friend! No, were I his son, I could not respect him more than I do. In fact, I know not any man more sincere, more open, more generous, or more honourable in every respect, than this old gentleman. But the extravagance of his notions and prejudices is odd enough. Since he is certain I cannot be united to his family, he is extremely civil; and, provided I be not his son-in-law, he will readily give up every thing, and allow me a superiority to himself. The only thing I cannot forgive him, is, that when we are alone, he will sometimes rally the pretended philosopher on his former lectures. His pleasantry on this head hurts me, and I am always vexed at it; but he turns my resentment into ridicule, and says, "Come along, let us go bring down a thrush or two; we have carried this argument far enough." And then he calls out, as we go out of doors: "Here, Clara, Clara! provide a good supper for your master; I am going to get him an appetite." Notwithstanding his age, also, I can assure you, he brushes among the vines with his gun, with as much activity as myself, and is incomparably a better marksman. I have some satisfaction, however, in that he dares not drop a word before his daughter, the little scholar prescribing no less to her father, than to her preceptor.—I return to our vintage.

We have been employed now these eight days in this agreeable occupation; and yet we have hardly done half our work. Besides the wines intended for sale and for common use, which are only simply though carefully made, our benevolent fairy makes others of a more exquisite fla-

flavour for us drinkers, I myself assisting in the magical operations. We make wines of all countries from the grapes of one vineyard: to make one sort she orders the stalks of the bunches to be twisted when the grape is ripe, and lets them dry by the heat of the sun upon the stock; for another, she has the grapes picked and stoned before they are put into the press; again, for a third sort, she has the red grapes gathered before sun-rising, and carefully conveyed to the press, fresh with their bloom, and covered with the morning-dew, to make white wine. She makes a sweet wine, by putting into the casks *must*, reduced to a syrup by evaporation; a dry wine by checking its fermentation; a bitter cordial by steeping wormwood *; and a muscadel wine, with the help of simples. All those different wines have their peculiar methods of preparation; every one of which is simple and wholesome. And thus an industrious œconomy makes up for a diversity of soils, and unites twenty climates in one.

You cannot conceive with what assiduity, with what alacrity, all our business is done. We sing and laugh all day long, without the least interruption to our work. We live altogether in the greatest familiarity; are all treated on a footing, and yet no one forgets himself. The ladies put on none of their fine airs; the country women are modest; the men droll, but never rude. Those are the most caressed who sing the best

* In Switzerland they drink a great deal of bitter wine; and, in general, as the herbs of the Alps have more virtue than the plants of other countries, they make great use of infusions.

best songs, tell the best stories, or hit off the best joke. Our good understanding even gives rise to pleasant bickerings between us ; and our mutual raillery is exerted only to shew how far we can bear with good temper each other's severity. There is no returning home to play the *gentle folks* : we stay all the day long in the vineyard ; Julia having caused a lodge to be built there, whither we retreat to warm ourselves when cold, or to shelter us when it rains. We dine with the peasants, and at their hour, as well as work with them. We eat their soup, a little course indeed, but very good, and seasoned with excellent herbs. We laugh not at their downright behaviour and rustic compliments ; but, in order to free them from constraint, give unto their own ways without affectation. This complaisance on our side, also, is not lost upon them ; they are sensible of it ; and, seeing that we are so ready to go out of our way for them, they are more willing to go on in their own for us. At dinner the children are brought from the house, and pass the rest of the day in the vineyard. How rejoiced are the peasants to see them ! then, taking them up in their sturdy arms, they bless them, and wish heaven may prolong their days, to resemble their parents, and make them in like manner a blessing to their country. When I think that the most of these men have borne arms, and understand the use of the sword and musket, as well as the management of the hoe and pruning-knife, in seeing Julia so loved and respected by them, and herself and children received with such affecting acclamations, I cannot help calling to mind the virtuous and illustrious

trious Agrippina, shewing her son to the troops of Germanicus. Incomparable Julia! who exercises in the simplicity of private life, the despotic power of wisdom and beneficence; your person a dear and sacred trust deposited in the hands of your country-men, every one of whom would defend and protect you at the hazard of his own life; it is yours to live more securely, more honourably in the midst of a whole people, who loves you, than monarchs surrounded with their guards.

In the evening, we all return home chearfully together; the work-people being lodged and boarded with us all the time of the vintage; and even on Sundays, after the evening service, we assemble and dance together till supper-time. On the other days of the week, also, we remain all together, after we are returned home, except the baron, who, eating no supper, goes to bed early, and Julia, who with her children stays with him till his bed-time. Thus, from the time we take upon ourselves the business of the vintage till we quit it, we never once mix the city and country-life together. These Saturnalia are much more agreeable and discreet than those of the Romans. The contrast they affected was too preposterous to improve either the master or the slave; but the peaceful equality which prevails here, re-establishes the order of nature, is productive of instruction to some, of consolation to others, and of a friendly connection between all *. Our assembly-room is an old

* If hence arises a kind of equality not less agreeable to those who descend, than to those who are elevated, does it not
fol-

old hall, with a great chimney and a good fire in it. On the mantle-piece are lighted up three lamps, made by Mr Wolmar's orders, of tin, just to catch the smoak and reflect the light. To prevent giving rise to envy, every thing is carefully avoided that might in the eyes of these poor people appear more costly than what they meet with at home; no other mark of opulence being displayed, than the choice of the best of common things, and a little more profusion in their distribution. Supper is served upon two long tables; where the pomp and luxury of entertainments is amply supplied by good humour and plenty. Every one sits down to table, master, labourers, and servants; every one without distinction gets up to help himself, without exception or preference; the whole repast ending in gratitude and festivity. - All drink at their discretion, subject to no other rules than those of decency and sobriety. The presence of superiors, whom they so truly respect, keeps the work-people within bounds; yet lays no restraint on their ease and cheerfulness. And should any one happen to forget himself and give offence,

the

follow, that all conditions of life are in themselves almost indifferent, since people are not always confined to them? Beggars are unhappy, because they are always beggars; kings are miserable because they always kings. People in a middling condition are the happiest, because they can easier vary their circumstances, to enjoy the pleasures of those above or those below them. They are also more intelligent, because they have an opportunity of knowing more of the prejudices of mankind, and of comparing them with each other. This seems the principal reason why, generally speaking, people of a middling station in life are the most happy, and are persons of the best sense.

the company is not disturbed by reprimands, but the offender gets his dismissal on the morrow.

Thus do I take advantage of the pleasures of the country and of the season. I resume the freedom of living after the manner of the country, and to drink pure wine pretty often: but I drink none that is not poured out by the hands of one or other of the two cousins; who take upon them to measure my thirst by the strength of my head, and to manage my reason as they think proper; nor does any one know better how to manage it, or has like them the art to give or take it away from me at pleasure. When the fatigue of the day, or the length and festivity of the repast, add to the strength of the liquor, I indulge myself without restraint in the follies it inspires. They are no longer such as I need suppress, even in the presence of the sagacious Wolmar. I am no longer afraid his penetrating eye should see into the bottom of my heart: and, when a tender idea arises in my memory, one look from Clara dissipates it, one look of Julia makes me blush for my weakness.

After supper, we sit up an hour or two to strip hemp; every one singing a song in turn. Sometimes the women sing all together, or one sings alone, and the rest join in chorus to the burden of the song. Most of their songs are old tales, set to no very agreeable tunes. There is, notwithstanding, something antique and affecting, which on the whole is very pleasing. The words are generally very simple, unaffected, and often very sorrowful: they are, nevertheless, entertaining. Clara cannot forbear smiling, Julia blushing, and myself from giving a sigh, when the same turns and expressions are repeated in

these songs which have heretofore been made use of between us. On those occasions, the remembrance of times past rushes upon my mind: I am seized with a trembling, an insupportable burden oppresses my heart, and leaves so deep an impression of sorrow that I can hardly shake it off. I find, nevertheless, in these evenings, a sort of pleasure which I cannot describe, and which is nevertheless very great. The union of people of different conditions, the simplicity of their occupation, of ease, concord, and tranquillity, the peaceful sensation it awakes in the soul; these altogether have something affecting that disposes every one to make choice of the most interesting songs. The concert of female voices is also not without its charms. For my part, I am convinced, that of all kinds of harmony there is none so agreeable as singing in unison; and that we only require a variety of concords, because our taste is depraved. Does not harmony in fact exist in every single note? what then can we add to it, without changing the proportion which nature has established in the relation of harmonious sounds. She has done every thing in the best manner; but we would do better, and so spoil all.

There is as great an emulation among us about the work of the evening, as about that of the day: and a piece of roguery I was guilty of yesterday, brought me into a little disgrace. As I am not the most expert at hemp-peeling, and am sometimes absent in thought, I begun to be tired with always being pointed at for doing the least work. I shovelled the stalks with my feet therefore from my next neighbours, to enlarge

large my own heap; but that inexorable Mrs Orbe, perceiving it, made a sign to Julia, who, detecting me in the fact, reprimanded me severely. Come, come, says she aloud, I will have no injustice done here, though in jest; it is thus people accustom themselves to cheating, and prove rogues in good earnest, and then, what is worse, treat it but as a jest.

In this manner we pass our evenings. When it is near bed-time, Mrs Wolmar stands up, and says, Come, now let us to our fire-works. On which, every one takes up his bundle of hemp-stalks, the honourable proofs of his labour, which are carried in triumph into the middle of the court-yard, and there laid as trophies in a heap, and set on fire. Every one, however, has not indiscriminately this honour; but those to whom Julia adjudges it, by giving the torch to him or her who has done most work that evening; and when this happens to be herself, she does it with her own hands, without more to do. This ceremony is accompanied with acclamations and clapping of hands. The stalks soon burn up in a blaze, which ascends to the clouds; a real bonfire, about which we laugh and sing, till it is out. After this, the whole company are served with liquor, and every one drinks to the health of the conqueror, and goes to bed, content with a day passed in labour, cheerfulness, and innocence, which he would willingly begin again on the morrow, the next after that, and every morrow to the end of his days.

L E T T E R CXLIV.

To Mr WOLMAR.

ENJOY, my dear Wolmar, the fruits of your benevolent care. Receive the sincere acknowledgments of a heart which you have taken so much pains to render worthy of being offered to your acceptance. Never did any man undertake so arduous a task; never did any one attempt what you have executed; nor did ever a susceptible and grateful mind, feel more than that with which you have inspired me. Mine had lost its force, its vigour, its very being; but you have restored them all: I was dead to virtue, to happiness; and owe to you that moral life, to which I feel myself raised. O my benefactor! my father! in giving myself up entirely to you, I can only offer, as to the Deity, the gifts of which yourself have been the donor.

Must I confess to you my weakness and my fears? Hitherto I have always distrusted myself. It is not a week ago that I blushed for the weakness of my heart, and thought all our pains had been lost. That cruel and discouraging moment, however, thanks to heaven and you, is past, never to return. I do not think myself cured, only because you tell me so, but because I feel it: I stand no longer in need of your answering for me; you have put me in a state to answer for myself. It was necessary for me to be absent from you and Julia, to know what I should be without your support. It is at a distance

stance from her abode, that I learn not to be afraid to approach her.

I write the particulars of our journey to Mrs Orbe; and shall not repeat them here; I am not unwilling you should know my foibles; but I have not the courage to tell you of them. My dear Wolmar, it is my last fault. I feel myself already so far from being liable to commit the like again, that I cannot think of it without disdain; and yet it is so little a while since, that I cannot acknowledge it without shame. You who can so readily forgive my errors, will doubtless forgive the shame which attends my repentance.

Nothing is now wanting to complete my happiness. My Lord B—— has told me all. Shall I then, my dear friend, be devoted entirely to you? shall I educate your children? shall the eldest of the three be preceptor to the rest? With what ardour have I not desired it? Often has the pleasing hope of being thought worthy of such employment, redoubled my assiduity to second your paternal care. How often have I not expressed my earnestness, in this particular, to Julia! with what pleasure have I not interpreted the discourse of both of you in my favour? But although she was convinced of my zeal for your service, and seemed to approve of its object, she never entered so explicitly into my designs as to encourage me to speak more openly. I was sensible I ought rather to merit that honour than ask for it. I expected of you and her that proof of your confidence and esteem. I have not been deceived in my expectation;

tation; and believe me, my dear friends, you shall not be deceived in yours.

You know, that, in consequence of our conversation on the education of our children, I have thrown together upon paper some of those sentiments which such conversation furnished me with, and which you approved. Since my departure, some new reflections have suggested themselves on the same subject: I have reduced the whole into a kind of system, which, when I have properly digested, I shall communicate to you for your examination. I do not think, however, I shall be able to make it fit for your inspection till after our arrival at Rome. My system is a supplement to that of Julia; or rather, it is nothing more than a connection and illustration of her's; for it consists only in rules to prevent the natural disposition from being spoiled, in subjecting it to the laws and customs of society.

I have recovered my reason by your care: my heart is again sound and at liberty: I see myself beloved by all whose love I could wish to possess: futurity presents me with an agreeable prospect. Surely, therefore, my situation should be delightful; but it is decreed, my soul shall never enjoy tranquillity. As the end of our journey approaches, I see the crisis of the fate of my illustrious friend: it is I, if I may so say, who ought to decide it. Cannot I at least do that once for him which he has so often done for me? cannot I nobly discharge the greatest and most important duty of my life? My dear Wolmar, I retain all your lessons in my heart; but, to make them useful, why do not I possess
also

also your sagacity ? Ah, could I but one day see Lord B—— happy ! could I, agreeable to your projects, see us but all assembled together never to part again ! could I entertain a wish for any thing on earth besides ! Yes, one ; the accomplishment of which depends not on you, nor me, nor on any other person in the world ; but on him who has a reward in store for the virtues of Julia, and keeps a secret register of your good actions.

LETTER CXLV.

To Mrs ORBE.

WHERE are you, my charming cousin ? O where is the amiable confident of that feeble heart, which is, on so many accounts, yours, and to which you have so often administered consolation ? come, and let me lay open to you the confession of its last error. Is it not always your province to purify it by confession and pardon ? is there a fault which it can reproach itself with after it hath confessed it to you ? No, it is no longer the same ; and its regeneration is owing to you : you have given me a new heart, which now offers you its first services : but I shall not think myself quite free from that which I quit, until I have deposited it in your hands ; there, then, O thou who wert witness to its first beatings, receive now its last.

The moment of my life in which I had most reason to be contented with myself was that in which I left you. Recovered of my errors, I
looked

looked upon that instant as the tardy æra of my return to my duty. I begun it therefore, by paying off part of that immense debt I owed to friendship, in leaving so delightful an abode to follow a benefactor, a philosopher, who pretending to stand in need of my services, put the success of his to the proof. The more disagreeable my departure, the more I piqued myself on making so great a sacrifice. After having spent half my lifetime in nourishing an unhappy passion, I consecrated the other half to justify it, and to render, by my virtues, a more worthy homage to her, who so long received that of my heart. I proudly contemplated the first of my days in which I had neither given occasion for my own blushes, for yours, for her's, nor for those of any one who was dear to me.

My Lord B——, being apprehensive of a sorrowful parting, was for our setting out early, without taking a formal leave; but though hardly any body was stirring in the house, we could not elude your friendly vigilance. Your door half open, and your woman on the watch; your coming out to meet us, and our going in and finding a table set out and tea made ready; all these circumstances brought to my mind those of former times; and, comparing my present departure with that which came to my remembrance, I found myself so very differently disposed to what I was on the former occasion, that I rejoiced to think Lord B—— was a witness of that difference, and hoped to make him forget at Milan the shameful scene of Besançon. I never found myself so resolute before; I prided myself in displaying my temper before you; I behaved

behaved with more fortitude than you had ever seen in me; and gloried, in parting, to think I had appeared before you such as I was going ever afterwards to be. This idea added to my courage; I supported my spirits by your esteem; and perhaps should have left you without weeping, if a tear, trickling from your eyes, had not drawn a sympathetic drop from mine.

I left you with a heart fully sensible of its obligations, and particularly penetrated with such as your friendship has laid me under; resolved to employ the rest of my life in deserving them. My Lord B——, taking me to task for my past follies, laid before me no very agreeable picture; and I knew by the just severity with which he censured my foibles, that he was little afraid of imitating them. He pretended, nevertheless, to be apprehensive of it; and spoke to me with some uneasiness of his journey to Rome, and the unworthy attachments which, in spite of himself, led him thither: but I saw plainly that he exaggerated his own dangers, to engage my attention the more to him, and draw it off from those to which I was myself exposed.

Just as we got into Villeneuve, one of our servants, who was but badly mounted, was thrown off his horse, and got a small contusion on his head: on which his master had him bled, and determined to stay there that night. We accordingly dined early, and afterwards took horses and went to Bex, to see the salt manufactory; where, at my Lord's desire, who had some particular reason for requesting it, I took a sketch of the building and works, so that we did not return to Villeneuve till night. After
supper

supper we chatted a good while over our punch, and went to bed pretty late. It was in this conversation he informed me of the charge intended to be committed to my care, and what measures had been taken to bring it about. You may judge of the effect this piece of information had upon me; a conversation of this nature did not incline me to sleep. It was at length, however, time to retire.

As I entered the chamber appointed for me, I immediately recollected it to be the same in which I had formerly slept, on my journey to Sion. The view of it made an impression on me, which would be very difficult for me to describe. I was struck with such lively ideas of what I then was, that I imagined myself again in the same situation, tho' ten years of my life had passed away in the interval, and all my troubles had been forgotten. But alas! that reflection was but of a short duration, and the next moment oppressed me with the weight of my former afflictions. How mortifying were the recollections that succeeded to my first reverie! what dreadful comparisons suggested themselves to my mind! Ye pleasures of early youth, ye exquisite delights of a first passion, O why, said I, doth your remembrance wound a heart already too much oppressed with griefs? thrice happy were those days! days now no more, in which I loved and was beloved again; in which I gave myself up in peaceful innocence, to the transports of a mutual passion; in which I drank its intoxicating draughts, and all my faculties were lost in the rapture, the ecstasy, the delirium of love. On the rocks of Meillerie, in the midst
of

of frost and snow, with the frightful precipices before my eyes, was there a being in the creation so happy as I? and yet I then wept! I then thought myself unfortunate! sorrow even then ventured to approach my heart! what therefore should I be now, when I have possessed all that my soul held here, and lost it for ever? I deserve my misfortune, for having been so little sensible of my happiness!—did I weep then?—didst thou weep? unfortunate wretch! thou shalt weep no more—thou hast no right to weep—Why is she not dead? said I, in a transport of rage; yes, I should then be less unhappy: I could then indulge myself in my griefs; I should embrace her cold tomb with pleasure: my affliction should be worthy of her: I might then say, She hears my cries, she sees my tears, she is moved by my groans, she approves and accepts of my homage.—I should then at least have cherished the hope of being united to her again.—But she lives, and is happy in the possession of another—She lives, and her life is my death; her happiness is my torment; and heaven, having taken her from me, deprives me even of the mournful pleasure of regretting her loss—She lives, but not for me: she lives for my despair, who am an hundred times farther from her than if she were no more.

I went to bed under these tormenting reflections; they accompanied me in my sleep, and disturbed it with terrible apprehensions. The most poignant afflictions, sorrow, and death, composed my dreams; and all the evils I ever felt represented themselves to my imagination in a thousand new forms, to torment me over and over again.

gain. One vision in particular, and that the most cruel of all, still pursued me; and though the confused apparitions of various phantoms several times appeared and vanished, they all ended in the following.

Methought I saw the departed mother of your friend on her death-bed, and her daughter on her knees before her, bathed in tears, kissing her hands, and receiving her last breath. This scene, which you once described to me, and which will never be effaced from my memory, was represented in striking colours before me. ‘O my dear mother, (said Julia, in accents that chilled my very soul,) she who is indebted to you for her life, deprives you of yours!’ ‘Alas! take back what you gave me; for without you it will be only a life of sorrow.’ “My child, (answered her languishing mother,) “God is just, and his will must be obeyed—“you will be a mother in your turn, and”—she could say no more.—On this, methought I went forward, to look upon her; but she was vanished, and Julia lay in her place; I saw her plainly, and perfectly knew her, though her face was covered with a vail. I gave a shriek, and ran to take off the vail; but, methought after many attempts to lay hold of it I could not reach it, but tormented myself with vain endeavours to grasp what, though it covered her face, appeared to be palpable. Upon which, methought she addressed me in a faint voice, and said, ‘Friend, be composed, the awful vail that is spread over me, is too sacred to be removed.’ At these words I struggled, made a new effort, and awoke; when I found myself in my bed,

bed, harrassed with fright and fatigue, my face covered with big drops of sweat, and drowned in tears.

My fears being a little dissipated, I went to sleep again; again the same dream put me into the same agitations: I awoke again, and went to sleep the third time, when the same mournful scene still presented itself, the same appearance of death, and always the same impenetrable vail, eluding my grasp, and hiding from me the dying object which it covered.

On waking from this last dream, my terror was so great, that I could not overcome it, the' quite awake. I threw myself out of bed, without well knowing what I did, and wandered up and down my chamber, like a child in the dark, imagining myself beset with phantoms, and still fancying in my ears, the sound of that voice, whose plaintive notes I never heard without emotion. The dawn of day, beginning to cast some light upon the objects in my chamber, served only to transform them, agreeable to my troubled imagination. My fright increased, and at length entirely deprived me of reason. Having with some difficulty found the door, I ran out of my room, bolted into that of Lord B——, and, drawing open his curtains, threw myself down upon his bed, almost breathless, crying out, “She is gone—she is gone—I shall never see her more.”—His Lordship started out of his sleep, and flew to his sword, imagining himself attacked by robbers. But he presently perceived who it was; and I soon after recollected myself; this being the second time of my

life that I had appeared before him in such confusion.

He made me sit down and compose myself; and as soon as he had learnt the cause of my fright, endeavoured to turn it into ridicule; but, seeing me too deeply affected with it, and that the impression it had made was not to be easily effaced, he changed his tone. "For shame, (says he with an air of severity,) you neither "deserve my friendship nor esteem: had I taken a quarter of the pains with one of my "footmen which I have done with you, I had "made a man of him: but you are fit for nothing." It is indeed, my Lord, (answered I,) too true. I had nothing good in me but what came from her, whom now I shall see no more; and am therefore good for nothing. At this he smiled, and embraced me. Come, come, says he, endeavour to compose yourself; to-morrow you will be a reasonable creature. He then changed the conversation, and proposed to set out. The horses were accordingly ordered to be put to. In getting into the chaise, my Lord whispered something to the postilion, who immediately drove off.

We travelled for some time without speaking. I was so taken up with my last night's dream, that I heard and saw nothing; not even observing that the lake, which, the day before, was on my right hand, was now on my left. The rattling of the chaise upon the pavement, however, at length awoke me out of my lethargy; I looked up, and to my great surprise, found we were returned to Clarens. About a furlong from the gate, my Lord ordered us to be set down; and

and taking me aside, "You see my design, (said he;) it has no need of further explanation: go "thou visionary mortal, (continued he, pressing my hand between his,) go and see her "again. Happy in exposing your follies only "to your friends, make haste, and I will wait "for you here; but be sure you do not return, "till you have removed that fatal vail which is "woven in your brain."

What could I say? I left him without making any answer, and, trembling as I advanced, slowly approached the house. What a part, said I to myself, am I going to act here? how dare I shew myself? what pretext have I for this unexpected return? with what face can I plead my ridiculous terrors, and support the contemptuous looks of the generous Wolmar? In short, the nearer I drew to the house, the more childish my fears seemed to me, and the more contemptible my extravagant behaviour: my mind, however, still misgave me, and I went on, though every step more slowly, till I came just to the court-yard; when I heard the door of the elysium just open and shut again. Seeing nobody come out, I made a tour round the aviary, keeping as close to it as possible; I then listened, and could hear you conversing together; but, though I could not distinguish a word you said, I thought I perceived something in the sound of your voice so languishing and tender, that I could not hear it without emotion; and in Julia's a sweet and affectionate accent, not only such as is usual to her, but so mild and peaceful as to convince me all was well.

This restored me to my senses at once, and

woke me in good earnest from my dream. I immediately perceived myself so altered, that I laughed at my ridiculous fears; and while I reflected that only a hedge and a few shrubs prevented me from seeing her alive and in good health, whom I imagined I should never see again, I renounced for ever my fearful and chimerical apprehensions; and determined without more ado, to return without even seeing her. You may believe me, Clara, when I protest to you that I not only did not see her, but went back, proud of not having been so weak as to push my credulity to the end, and of having at least done so much credit to myself, as not to have it said of a friend of Lord B——'s, that he could not get the better of a dream.

This, my dear cousin, is what I had to tell you, and is the last confession I have to make. The other particulars of our journey are not at all interesting: let it suffice, therefore, to assure you, that not only his Lordship has been very well satisfied with me since, but that I am still more so with myself, who am more sensible of my cure than he can be. For fear of giving him any needless distrust, I concealed from him my not having actually seen you. When he asked me if the vail was drawn aside, I answered without hesitation in the affirmative; and we have not mentioned it since. Yes, cousin, the vail is drawn side for ever; that vail which has so long hoodwinked my reason. All my unruly passions are extinguished. I see my duty, and respect it. You are both dearer to me than ever, but my heart knows no difference between you,
nor

nor feels the least inclination to separate the inseparables.

We arrived the day before yesterday at Milan, and the day after to-morrow we shall leave it. In about a week we hope to be at Rome, and expect to find letters from you on our arrival. How tedious will seem the time before I shall see those two surprising persons who have so long troubled the repose of the greatest minds! O Julia! O Clara! no woman that is not equal to you, is worthy of such a man!

L E T T E R CXLVI.

From Mrs ORBE.

WE all waited with impatience to hear from you, so that you will easily guess how much pleasure your letters gave our little community; but what you will hardly imagine is, that they should give me less than any other person in the house. They all were pleased that you had happily passed the Alps; for my part, I had no pleasure in reflecting that the Alps were between us.

As to the particulars of your return, we have said nothing of them to the baron: besides, I skipped over some of your soliloquies, in reading your letter in company. Mr Wolmar is so ingenuous, as only to laugh at you; but Julia could not recollect the last moments of her dying mother, without shedding fresh tears. However, this revival of her affliction was all the effect your letter had on her.

With respect to myself, I will confess to you, my dear preceptor, that I am no longer surprised to see you in continual astonishment at yourself; always committing some new folly, and always repenting of it: you have long passed your life in self-reproach over-night, and in self-applause in the morning.

I will freely declare to you, also, that the great effort of your courage, in turning back when so near us, just as wise as you came, does not appear to me so extraordinary as it may to you. I think I can discover more vanity in it, than prudence; and, I believe, upon the whole, I should have liked a little less fortitude with more discretion. From such a manner of running away, may not one ask, to what purpose you came? You were ashamed to shew yourself; and it is of your being afraid to shew yourself that you ought in fact to be ashamed; as if the pleasure of seeing your friends were not an ample recompense for the pretty chagrin their raillery might give you. Ought you not to have thought yourself happy in the opportunity of diverting us with your bewildered looks? As I could not laugh at you then, however, I will laugh at you now; though I lose half the pleasure in not seeing your confusion.

Unhappily there is something worse than all this; which is, that I have caught your fears, without having your means of dispelling them. That dream of yours has something in it so horrible, that I am at once terrified and afflicted with it, in spite of all I can do. In reading your letter, I am apt to blame your agitation; after I have read it, I blame your security. It
is

is impossible to see a sufficient reason for your being so much affected, and at the same time for your becoming tranquil. It is very strange, that your fearful apprehensions should prevail till the very moment in which you might have been satisfied, and that you should stop there. Another step, a motion, a word, had done the business. You were alarmed without reason, and composed again without cause: but you have infected me with a terror which you no longer feel; and it appears, that if you have given an instance once in your life of your fortitude, it has been at my expence. Since the receipt of your fatal letter, my heart is constantly oppressed. I cannot approach Julia, without trembling at the thoughts of losing her. I think every now and then I see a deadly paleness overspread her countenance; and this morning, as I embraced her, tears burst involuntarily from me, and poured down my cheeks. O, that vail! that vail!—There is something so prophetic in it, that it troubles me every time I think of it. No, I cannot forgive you for not removing it, when you had it in your power; and fear I shall never have a moment's peace of mind till I see you again in company with her. You must own, that, after having talked so long of philosophy, you have here given a very unseasonable proof of yours. Ah! dream again, and come and see your friends; it were better for you to do this and be a *visionary mortal*, than to run away from them and be a philosopher.

It appears by a letter of Lord B——'s to Mr Wolmar, that he thinks seriously of coming to settle with us. As soon as he is determined,
and

and his heart has made its choice, may you both return stedfast and happy! This is the constant prayer of our little community, and above all that of your friend,

CLARA ORBE.

P. S. If you really heard nothing of our conversation in the elysium, it is perhaps so much the better for you; for you know me to be vigilant enough to see some people without their seeing me, and severe enough to mortify listeners.

L E T T E R CXLVII.

From Mr W O L M A R.

AS I write to Lord B——, and explain myself so fully with respect to you, I have hardly any thing more to say at present than to refer you to his letter. Yours would perhaps require of me a return of civilities; but these I had rather make in actions than in words. To make you one of my family, to treat you as my brother, my friend; to make her you loved your sister; to put into your hands a paternal authority over my children; to invest you with my privileges, after having robbed you of yours; these are the compliments I have to make you. If, on your part, you justify my conduct, it will be sufficient praise. I have endeavoured to honour you with my esteem; it is yours to honour me by your merit. Let no other encomiums pass between us.

So

So far am I from being surpris'd at seeing you affected with a dream, that I see no very good reason for your reproaching yourself for being so. One dream more or less seems to be of no importance in such systematical gentlemen as yourself, whose very principles are so visionary. But what I reproach you for, is less the effect of your dream, than the species of it; and that for a reason very different, perhaps, from what you may imagine. A certain tyrant once condemn'd a man to death for dreaming that he had stabbed him. Recollect the reason he gave for that sentence, and make the application. What! you are going to determine the fate of your friend, and you are thinking of your old amours! Had it not been for the conversation of the preceding evening, I should never forgive you that dream. Think in the day-time of what you are going to do at Rome, and you will dream less at night of what is doing at Vevay.

The little French-woman is sick, which keeps Mrs Wolmar so constantly employed that she has not time to write to you. Somebody, however, will willingly take upon themselves that agreeable task. Happy youth! to whose happiness every thing conspires! the rewards of virtue all await your merit. As to that of my good-will, trouble no one with it; it is from you only I expect the recompense.

LETTER CXLVIII.

To Mr WOLMAR.

THIS letter must be kept to ourselves. Let
the

the errors of the best of men be for ever buried in profound secrecy. In what a dangerous task have I engaged! O my wife and generous friend! why do I not retain your counsel in my memory, as I do your benevolence at my heart! never did I before stand in more need of your prudence, nor did ever the apprehensions of falling short of it so much embarrass the little I have. Ah! what is become of your paternal advice, your instruction, your knowledge? what will become of me without you? Yes, in this critical moment, I would give up every flattering prospect in life to have you here but for one week.

I have been deceived in all my conjectures: I have as yet done nothing but blunder. I was afraid only of the marchioness. After having seen her, and been struck with admiration at her beauty and address, I applied myself, with all my might, to wean the affections of her noble lover from so attracting an object. Charmed with the thoughts of bringing him over to the side where I thought there was no danger, I launched out in the praise of Laura, and spoke of her with the esteem and admiration with which she had inspired me: in weakening his stronger attachment for her rival, I hoped, by degrees, entirely to destroy both.

He readily gave into my design; and exceeding even the bounds of complaisance, perhaps to punish my importunities, by alarming me on the other side, he affected a much greater warmth of passion for Laura than he really felt. But what shall I say to him now? the ardour of his passion remains without any affectation. His heart, exhausted by so many trials, was left
in

in a state of weakness, of which she has taken the advantage. It would be difficult indeed for any man long to affect a passion for her which he did not feel. In fact, it is impossible to look upon this lovely unfortunate, without being struck by her air and figure; a certain cast of languor and depression, which constantly shades her charming features, in damping the vivacity of her looks, renders them but the more affecting; even as the sun darts its rays through the passing clouds, so her eyes cast the more piercing looks through the clouds of grief that obscure their lustre. Her very dejection has all the grace of modesty; in seeing, one pities her; in hearing, one respects her. In short, I can avow, in justification of my friend, that I know only two men in the world, who could see and converse with her without danger.

Oh Wolmar! he is lost to reason. I see, and feel it; I own it to you with bitterness of heart. I tremble to think how far his extravagant passion may make him forget himself and his duty. I tremble lest that intrepid love of virtue, which makes him despise the opinion of the world, should hurry him into the other extreme, and lead him to trespass even the sacred laws of decorum and decency. Shall my Lord B— contract such a marriage?—can you think it—under the eye of his friend too! who sees, who suffers it!—and who lies under infinite obligations to him!—No, his hand, ere it be thus abused, shall rip open my breast, and tear my heart out.

But what shall I do? how shall I behave myself? you know his impetuosity of temper. Argument

gument will avail nothing ; and his discourse of late, has only increased my apprehensions for him. At first, I affected not to understand him, and reasoned indirectly in general maxims ; he, in turn, affected not to understand me. If I endeavoured to touch him a little more to the quick, he answers sententiously, and imagines he has refuted me. If I reply and enforce my argument, he flies into a passion, and talks in a manner so unfriendly, that a real friend knows not how to answer him. You may believe, that, on this occasion, I am neither timid nor bashful ; when we are doing our duty, we are too apt to be proud and tenacious ; but pride has nothing to do here ; it is necessary I should succeed ; and unsuccessful attempts will only prejudice better means. I hardly dare enter with him into any argument ; for I every day experience the truth of what you told me, that he is a better reasoner than I, and that the way to win him to my party is not to irritate him by dispute.

Besides, he looks a little cold upon me at present. Appearances would make one apt to think he is uneasy at my importunity. How this weakness debases a man in so many respects superior to the rest of mankind ! the great, the sublime Lord B—, stands in awe of his friend, his creature, his pupil ! It even seems, by some words he has let fall concerning the choice of his residence if he does not marry, that he has a mind to try my fidelity by opposing it to my interest. He well knows I ought not, neither can I leave him. O Wolmar, I will indeed do my duty, and follow my benefactor. If I were
base

base and mean, what should I gain by my perfidy? Julia and her generous husband would not trust the education of their children to a betrayer of his friend.

You have often told me, that the inferior passions are not easily turned from their pursuit; but that the superior ones may be armed against themselves. I imagined, I might be able to make use of that maxim in the present case. In fact, the motives of compassion, of a contempt for the prejudices of the world, of habit, of every thing that determines my Lord B—— on this occasion, are of that inferior nature, and elude all my attacks: whereas true love is inseparable from generosity, and by that one always has some hold of him. I have attempted that indirect method, and despair not of success. It may seem cruel; and, to say truth, I have not done it without some repugnance. Nevertheless, all circumstances considered, I conceive I am doing service even to Laura herself. What would she do in the rank to which she might be raised by marriage, but expose her former ignominy? but, how great may she not be in remaining what she is! if I know any thing of that extraordinary young lady, she is better formed to enjoy the sacrifice she has made, than the rank she ought to refuse.

If this resource fails me, there remains one more in the magistracy, on account of their difference of religion; but this method shall not be taken, till I am reduced to the last extremity, and have tried every other in vain. Whatever may happen, I shall spare nothing to prevent so unworthy and disgraceful an alliance.

liance. Believe me, my honoured Wolmar, I shall be tenacious of your esteem to the latest hour of my life; and whatever my Lord may write to you, whatever you may have said, depend on it, cost what it will, while this heart beats within my breast, Lauretta Pisana shall not be lady B——.

If you approve of my measures, this letter needs no answer; if you think me in any wise mistaken, favour me with your instructions. But be expeditious, for there is not a moment to lose. I shall have my letter directed by a strange hand: do the same by your answer. After having read what I have written, please to burn my letter, and be silent as to its contents. This is the first and the only secret I ever desired you to conceal from my two cousins: and if I had dared to confide more in my own judgment, you yourself should have remained ignorant of the affair *.

LETTER CXLIX.

Mrs WOLMAR to Mrs ORBE.

THE courier from Italy seemed only to wait your departure, for his own arrival; as if to

* For the better understanding this and Letter CLIII. the reader should have been made acquainted with the adventures of Lord E—, which at first I had indeed some notion of inserting in this collection. But, on second thoughts, I could not resolve to spoil the simplicity of this history of the two lovers, with the extravagance of his. It is better to leave something to the reader's imagination.

to punish you for having staid only for him. Not that I myself made the pretty discovery of the cause of your loitering : it was my husband who observed, that after the horses had been put to at eight o'clock, you deferred your departure till eleven ; not out of regard to us, but for a reason easy to be guessed at, from your asking twenty times, if it was ten o'clock, because the post generally goes by at that time.

You are caught, my dear cousin ; you cannot deny it. In spite of the prophetic Chaillot, her Clara, so wild, or rather so discreet, has not been so to the end. You are caught in the same toils from which you took so much pains to extricate your friend, and have not been able to preserve that liberty yourself, to which you restored me. It is my turn to laugh now. Ah, my dear friend, one ought to have your talents to know how to laugh like you, and give even to raillery the affecting turn and appearance of kindness. Besides, what a difference in our situation ! with what face can I divert myself with an evil of which I am the cause, and from which you have taken upon yourself to free me. There is not a sentiment in your breast that does not awake a sense of gratitude in mine ; even your weakness being in you the effect of virtue. It is this which consoles and diverts me. My errors are to be lamented ; but one may laugh at the false modesty which makes you blush at a passion as pure as yourself.

But, let us return to your Italian courier, and leave moralizing for a while. This courier then, who has been so long in coming, you will ask what he has brought us. Nothing but good

news of our friends, and a large packet for you. Oho! I see you smile and take breath now. As the letter is sent you, however, you will doubtless wait patiently to know what it contains. It may yet nevertheless be of some estimation, even though it did not come when expected; for it breathes such a tender—but I will only write news to you, and I dare say what I was going to say is none.

With that letter is come another from Lord B——, to my husband, with a great many compliments also for us. This contains some real news, which is so much the more unexpected, as the first was silent on the subject. Our friends at Rome were to set out the next day for Naples, where Lord B—— has some business; and from whence they are to go to see mount Vesuvius——can you conceive, my dear, that such a sight can be entertaining? But on their return to Rome, think, Clara, guess what may happen.—Lord B—— is on the point of being married—not, I thank heaven, to that unworthy marchioness; he tells us, on the contrary, that she is much indisposed. To whom then?——To Laura, the amiable Laura, who——yet, what a marriage! our friend says not a word about it. Immediately after the marriage, they will all three set out and come thither, to take their future measures. What they are to be my husband, has not told me; but he expects that St Preux will stay with us.

I must confess to you his silence gives me some little uneasiness; I cannot see clearly through it. I think I see an odd peculiarity of circumstances, and contests of human passions
abso-

absolutely unintelligible. I cannot see how so good a man should contract so lasting an affection for so bad a woman as the marchioness; or indeed, how she herself, being of such a violent and cruel temper, could entertain so ardent a love, if one may so call her guilty passion, for a man of so different a disposition. Neither can I imagine, how a young creature, so generous, affectionate and disinterested as Laura, could be able to support her first dissoluteness of manners; how that flattering and deceitful tenderness of heart, which misleads our sex, should recover her; how love, which is the ruin of so many modest women, should make her chaste.

Will lady B—— then come hither? hither, my dear Clara! what do you think of it? After all, what a prodigy must that astonishing woman be, who, ruined by a dissolute and abandoned education, was reclaimed by her tenderness of heart, and whom love hath conducted to virtue! Ought any one to admire her more than I, who have acted quite contrary; who was led astray by inclination, when every thing else conspired to conduct me in the paths of virtue. I sunk not so low, it is true; but have I raised myself like her? have I avoided so many snares, and made such sacrifices as she has made? From the lowest ignominy she has risen to the highest degree of honour, and is a thousand times more respectable than if she had never fallen. She has sense and virtue: what needs she more to resemble us? If it be possible for a woman to repair the errors of her youth, what right have I to more indulgence than she? with whom can I

hope to stand excused, and to what respect can I pretend, if I refuse to respect her?

And yet, though my reason tells me this, my heart speaks against it; and, without being able to tell why, I cannot think it right that Lord B— should contract such a marriage, and that his friend should be concerned in the affair. Such is the force of prejudice! so difficult is it to shake off the yoke of public opinion! which, nevertheless, generally induces us to be unjust: the past good is effaced by the present evil; but, is the past evil ever effaced by any present good?

I communicated to my husband my uneasiness as to the conduct of St Preux in this affair. He seems, said I, to be ashamed to speak of it to my cousin; I know he is incapable of baseness, but he is too easy, and may have too much indulgence for the foibles of a friend.—No, answered he, he has done what he ought, and I know will continue to do so; this is all I am at liberty to tell you at present of the matter; but St Preux is honest, and I will engage for him, you will be satisfied with his conduct.—It is impossible, Clara, that Wolmar can deceive me, or St Preux him. So positive an assurance therefore fully satisfied me; and made me suspect my scruples to be the effect of a false delicacy, and that if I was less vain and more equitable, I should find Laura more deserving the rank of lady B—.

But let us take leave of her for the present, and return to ourselves. Do not you perceive too well, in reading this letter, that our friends are likely to return sooner than we expected? and is not your heart a little affected by it? Does
it

it not flutter, and beat quicker than ordinary ; that heart too susceptible, and too nearly akin to mine ? Is it not apprehensive of the danger of living familiarly with a beloved object ? to see him every day ? to sleep under the same roof ? and if my errors did not lessen me in your esteem, does not my example give you reason to fear for yourself ? In your younger years, how many apprehensions for my safety did not your good sense and friendship suggest, which a blind passion made me despise ! It is now, my dear friend, my turn to be apprehensive for you ; and I have the better claim to your regard, as what I have to offer is founded on sad experience. Attend to me then, ere it be too late ; lest, having passed half your life in lamenting my errors, you should pass the other in lamenting your own.

Above all things, place not too great a confidence in your gaiety of temper, which, though it may be a security to those who have nothing to fear, generally betrays those who are in real danger. You, my dear Clara, once laughed at love ; but that was because you were a stranger to the passion, and not having felt its power, you thought yourself above its attacks. Love is avenged, and in its turn laughs at you. Learn to distrust its deceitful mirth, lest it should one day cost you an equal portion of grief. My dear friend, it is time to lay you open to yourself ; for hitherto you have not taken that interesting view : you are mistaken in your own character, and know not how to set a just value upon yourself. You confide in the opinion of Chaillot ; who, because of your vivacity of disposition, judged you to be little susceptible of heart ; but a heart
like

like yours was beyond her talents to penetrate. Chaillot was incapable of knowing you, nor does any person in the world know you truly but myself. I have left you in your mistake so long as it could be of service to you ; but now that it may be hurtful, it is necessary to remove it.

You are lively, and imagine yourself to have but little sensibility. Ah, my dear, how much are you deceived ! your vivacity itself proves the contrary. Is it not always on sentimental subjects that it is exerted ? does not even your pleasantry come from the heart ? your raillery is a greater proof of your affection, than the compliments of others ; you smile, but your smiles penetrate our souls ; you laugh, but your laughter draws from us the tears of tenderness ; and I observe you always serious among those who are indifferent to you.

Were you really no other than you pretend to be, tell me, what motive could have forcibly united us ? where had been those bonds of unparalleled friendship that now subsist between us ? by what miracle should such an attachment give the preference to a heart so little capable of it ? Can she who lived but for her friend, be incapable of love ? she who would have left father, husband, relations, and country, to have followed her ? What have I done in comparison of this ! I who have confessedly a susceptible heart, and permitted myself to love ; yet, with all my sensibility, have hardly been able to return your friendship !

These contradictions have instilled into your head as whimsical an idea of your own character as such a giddy brain can conceive ; which

is,

is, to believe yourself at once the warmest friend and the coldest lover. Incapable of disowning these gentle ties with which you perceived you were bound, you thought yourself incapable of being fettered by any other. You thought nothing in the world but your Julia could affect you; as if those hearts which are by nature susceptible, could be affected but by one object, and as if, because you loved no other than me, I could be the proper object of your affection. You pleasantly asked me once, if the soul was of any sex. No, my dear, the soul is of no sex; but its affections make that distinction, and you begin to be too sensible of it. Because the first lover that offered himself did not affect you, you immediately concluded no other could; because you was not less in love with your suitor, you concluded you could never be in love with any one. When he became your husband, however, you loved him, and with so ardent an affection that it injured even the intimacy with your friend: that heart, so little susceptible, as you pretend, could annex to love as tender a supplement to satisfy the fond desires of a worthy man.

Ah, my poor cousin! it is your task for the future to resolve your own doubts; and if it be true,

Cb'un freddo amante è mal sicuro amico,

That a cold lover is a faithless friend,

I am greatly afraid I have at present one reason more than ever I had to rely upon you.

But to go on with what I had to say to you

ON

on this subject. I suspect that you were in love much sooner than you perhaps imagine; or at least that the same inclination which ruined me would have seduced you, had I not been first caught in the snare. Can you conceive a sentiment so natural and agreeable, could be so slow in its birth? Can you conceive, that, at our age we could either of us live in a familiarity with an amiable young man without danger, or that the conformity so general in our taste and inclination should not extend to this particular? No, my dear, you, I am certain, would have loved him, if I had not loved him first. Less weak, though not less susceptible, you might have been more prudent than I, without being more happy. But what inclination would have prevailed on your generous mind, over the horror you would have felt at the infidelity of betraying your friend? It was our friendship that saved you from the snares of love: you respected my lover with the same friendship, and thus redeemed your heart at the expence of mine.

Nor are these conjectures so void of foundation as you may imagine; nor, if I had a mind to recollect those times which I could wish to forget, would it be difficult for me to trace even in the care you imagined you took only in my concerns, a farther care, still more interesting, in those of the object of my affection. Not daring to love him yourself, you encouraged me to do it: you thought each of us necessary to the happiness of the other; and therefore, that heart, which has not its equal in the world, loved us both the more tenderly. Be assured, that had it not been for your own weakness, you would not have

have been so indulgent to me: but you would have reproached yourself for a just severity towards me, with an imputation of jealousy. You were conscious of having no right to contend with a passion in me, which ought nevertheless to have been subdued; and, being more fearful of betraying your friend than of not acting discreetly, you thought, in offering up your own happiness to ours, you had made a sufficient sacrifice to virtue.

This, my dear Clara, is your history; thus hath your despotic friendship laid me under the necessity of being obliged to you for my shame, and of thanking you for my errors. Think not, however, that I would imitate you in this. I am no more disposed to follow your example than you mine; and as you have no reason to fear falling into my errors, I have no longer, thank heaven! the same reasons for granting you indulgence. What better use can I make of that virtue to which you restored me, than to make it instrumental in the preservation of yours?

Let me therefore give you my farther advice on the present occasion. The long absence of our preceptor has not lessened your regard for him. Your being left again at liberty, and his return, have given rise to opportunity, which love hath been ingenuous enough to improve. It is not a new sentiment produced in your heart; it is only one which, long concealed there, has at length seized this occasion to discover itself. Proud enough to avow it to yourself, you are perhaps impatient to confess it to me. That confession might seem to you almost
ne-

necessary to make it quite innocent: in becoming a crime in your friend, it ceased to be one in you; and perhaps you only gave yourself up to the passion you so many years contended with, the more effectually to accomplish your friend's cure.

I perceived all this, my dear; and was little alarmed at a passion which I saw would be my own protection, and on account of which you have nothing to reproach yourself. The winter we passed together in peace and friendship, gave me yet more hopes of you; for I saw, that, so far from losing your vivacity, you seemed to have improved it. I frequently observed you affectionate, earnest, attentive; but frank in your professions, ingenuous even in your railery, always unreserved and open, and, in your liveliest sallies, the picture of innocence.

But since our conversation in the *elysium*, I have somewhat less reason to be satisfied with you. I find you frequently sad and pensive. You take as much pleasure in being alone as with your friend; you have not changed your language, but your accent; you are more cautious in your pleasantry; you do not mention him so often; one would think you were in constant fear lest he should overhear you; and it is easy to see by your inquietude, that you want to hear from him much oftener than you confess.

I tremble, my good cousin, lest you should not be sensible of the worst of your disorder, and that the shaft has pierced deeper than you seem to be aware of. Probe your heart, my dear, to the bottom; and then tell me, again I repeat
it,

it, tell me if the most prudent woman does not run a risque by being long in the company of a beloved object; tell me if the confidence which ruined me can be entirely harmless to you? you are both at liberty; this is the very circumstance that makes opportunity dangerous. In a mind truly virtuous, there is no weakness will get the better of conscience; and I agree with you, that one has always fortitude enough to avoid committing a wilful crime: but, alas! what is a constant protection against human weakness? Reflect, however, on consequences; think on the effects of shame. We must pay a due respect to ourselves, if we expect to receive it from others; for how can we flatter ourselves, that others will pay to us what we have not for ourselves? or where can we think she will stop in the career of vice, who sets out without fear? These arguments I should use even to women who pay no regard to religion and morality, and have no rule of conduct but the opinion of others; but with you, whose principles are those of virtue and Christianity, who see and love your duty, who know and follow other rules than those of public opinion, your first and most important honour is to stand excused by your own conscience.

Would you know where you are wrong in this whole affair? It is, I say again, in being ashamed of entertaining a sentiment which you have only to declare, to render it perfectly innocent: but with all your vivacity, no creature in the world is more timid. You affect pleasantry only to shew your courage, your poor heart trembling all the while for fear. In pre-

tending to ridicule your passion, you do exactly like the children, who sing in the dark because they are afraid. O my dear friend, reflect on what you yourself has often said : it is a false shame which leads to real disgrace, and virtue never blushes at any thing but what is criminal. Is love in itself a crime ? does it not on the contrary consist of the most refined as well as the most pleasing of all inclinations ; is not its end laudable and virtuous ? does it ever enter into base and vulgar minds ? does it not animate only the great and noble ? does it not ennoble their sentiments ? does it not in a manner double their being ? does it not raise them above themselves ? Alas ! if to be prudent and virtuous we must be insensible to love, among whom could virtue find its votaries on earth ? among the refuse of nature and the dregs of mankind.

Why then do you reproach yourself ? Have you not made choice of a worthy man ? is he not disengaged ? are not you so too ? does he not deserve all your esteem ? has he not the greatest regard for you ? will you not be even too happy in conferring happiness on a friend so worthy of that name ; paying, with your hand and heart the debts long ago contracted by your friend ; and in doing him honour by raising him to yourself, as a reward to unsuccessful merit.

I see what petty scruples still lie in your way. The receding from a declared resolution, by taking a second husband ; the exposing your weakness to the world ; the marrying a needy adventurer ; for low minds, always lavish of scandal, will doubtless so call him. These are the reasons

sons which make you rather ashamed of your passion, than willing to justify it; that make you desirous of stifling it in your bosom, rather than render it legitimate. But pray does the shame lie in marrying the man one loves, or in loving without marrying him? between these lies your choice. The regard you owe to the deceased requires you should respect his widow so much, as rather to give her a husband than a gallant: and, if your youth obliges you to make choice of one to supply his place, is it not paying a further regard to his memory, to fix that choice upon the man he most esteemed when living?

With respect to his inferiority in point of fortune, I shall perhaps only offend you in replying to so frivolous an objection, when it is opposed to good sense and virtue. I know of no debasing inequality, but that which arises either from character or education. To whatever rank a man of a mean disposition and low principle may rise, an alliance with him will always be scandalous. But a man educated in the sentiments of virtue and honour is equal to any other in the world, and may take place in whatever rank he pleases. You know what were the sentiments of your father, when your friend was proposed for me: "His family is reputable, though obscure; he is every-where deservedly esteemed." With all this, was he the lowest of mankind, he would deserve your consideration: for it is surely better to derogate from nobility than virtue; and the wife of a mechanic is more reputable than the mistress of a prince.

I have a glimpse of another kind of embarrassment, in the necessity you lie under of making the first declaration : for, before he presumes to aspire to you, it is necessary you should give him permission ; this is one of the circumstances justly attending an inequality of rank, which often obliges the superior to make the most mortifying advances. As to this difficulty I can easily forgive you ; and even confess it would appear to me of real consequence, if I could not find out a method to remove it. I hope you depend so far on me, as to believe this may be brought about without your being seen in it ; and on my part, I depend so much on my measures, that I shall undertake it with assurance of success : for notwithstanding what you both formerly told me of the difficulty of converting a friend into a lover, if I can read that heart which I too long studied, I do not believe that on this occasion any great art will be necessary. I propose, therefore, to charge myself with this negotiation, to the end that you may indulge yourself in the pleasure of his return, without reserve, regret, danger, or scandal. Ah, my dear cousin ! how delighted shall I be to unite for ever two hearts so well formed for each other, and which have been long united in mine. May they still (if possible) be more closely united ! may we have but one heart amongst us ! Yes, Clara, you will serve your friend by indulging your love ; and I shall be more certain of my own sentiments, when I shall no longer make a distinction between him and you.

But if, notwithstanding what I have alledged, you will not give into this project, my advice
is,

is, at all events, to banish this dangerous man; always to be dreaded by one or the other; for, be it as it may, the education of our children is still less important to us than the virtue of their mothers. I leave you to reflect during your journey on what I have written; we will talk further about it on your return.

I send this letter directly to Geneva; lest, as you were to lie but one night at Lausanne, it should not find you there. Pray, bring me a good account of that little republic. From the agreeable description, I should think you happy in the opportunity of seeing it, if I could set any store by pleasures purchased with the absence of my friends. I never loved grandeur, and at present I hate it for having deprived me of so many years of your company. Neither you nor I, my dear, went to buy our wedding-cloaths at Geneva; and yet, however deserving your brother may be, I much doubt whether your sister-in-law will be more happy, with her Flanders-lace and India silks, than we in our native simplicity. I charge you, however, notwithstanding my ill-natured reflections, to engage them to celebrate their nuptials at Clarens. My father hath written to yours, and my husband to the bride's mother, to invite them hither. Their letters you will find inclosed: please to deliver them, and enforce their invitations with your interest. This is all I could do, in order to be present at the ceremony; for I declare to you, I would not upon any account leave my family. Adieu. Let me have a line from you, at least to let me know when I am to expect you here. It is now the second day since you left me, and

I know not how I shall support two days more without you.

P. S. While I was writing this letter, Miss Harriot truly must give herself the air of writing to her mamma too. As I always like children should write their own thoughts, and not those which are dictated to them, I indulged her curiosity; and let her write just what she pleased without altering a word. This makes the third letter inclosed. I doubt, however, whether this is what you will look for in casting your eye over the contents of the packet. But, for the other letter you need not look long, as you will not find it. It is directed to you at Clarens; and at Clarens only it ought to be read: so take your measures accordingly.

L E T T E R C L.

HARRIOT to her Mother.

WHERE are you then, mamma? They say you are at Geneva; which is such a long, long way off, that one must ride two days, all day long, to reach you: surely, mamma, you do not intend to go round the world? My little pappa is set out this morning for Etange; my little grand-pappa is gone a-hunting; my little mamma is gone into her closet to write; and there is nobody with me but Parnette and the French-woman. Indeed, mamma, I do not know
how

how it is ; but, since our good friend has left us, we are all scattered about strangely. You began first, mamma ; you soon began to be tired, when you had nobody left to tease : but what is much worse since you are gone, is, that my little mamma is not so good-humoured as when you were here. My little boy is very well, but he does not love you, because you did not dance him yesterday as you used to do. As for me, I believe I should love you a little bit still, if you would return quickly, that one might not be so dull. But, if you would make it up with me quite, you must bring my little boy something that would please him. To quiet him indeed, would not be very easy ; you would be puzzled to know what to do with him. O that our good friend was but here now ! for it is as he said, my fine fan is broke to pieces, my blue skirt is torn all to bits, my white frock is in tatters ; my mittins are not worth a farthing. Fare you well, mamma : I must here end my letter ; for my little mamma has finished her's, and is coming out of her closet. I think her eyes are red, but I durst not say so : in reading this, however, she will see I observed it. My good mamma, you are certainly very naughty, to make my little mamma cry.

P. S. Give my love to my grand-pappa, to my uncles, to my new aunt and her mamma, and to every body : tell them I would kiss them all, and you too, mamma ; but that you are all so far off, I cannot reach you.

L E T.

L E T T E R C L I.

Mrs ORBE to Mrs WOLMAR.

BEFORE leaving Laufanne, I cannot but drop you a line to acquaint you of my safe arrival here, though not so chearfully disposed indeed as I could wish. I promised myself much pleasure in a journey which you have been so often tempted to take; but, in refusing to accompany me, you have made it almost disagreeable. And how should it be otherwise? when it is troublesome, I have all the trouble to myself; and when it is tolerably agreeable, I regret your not being with me to partake of the pleasure. I had nothing to say, it is true, against your reasons for staying at home; but do you think I was therefore satisfied with them? Indeed, my good cousin, if you do, you are mistaken; for the very reason why I am dissatisfied is, that I have no right to be so. I wonder you are not ashamed of yourself, to have always the best of the argument, and to prevent your friend from having what she likes, without leaving her one good reason to find fault with you. All had gone to rack and ruin, no doubt, had you left your husband, your family, and your little marmottes in the lurch for one week; it had been a wild scheme, to be sure; but I should have liked you a hundred times the better for it: whereas, in aiming to be all perfection, you are good for nothing at all, and are only fit to keep company with angels.

Notwithstanding our past disagreement, I
could

could not help being moved at the sight of my friends and relations; who, on their part, received me with pleasure, or at least with a profusion of civilities. I can give you no account of my brother, till I am better acquainted with him. With a tolerable figure, he has a good deal of the formal air of the country he comes from. He is serious, cold, and I think has a surly haughtiness in his disposition, which makes me apprehensive for his wife, that he will not prove so tractable a husband as ours, but will take upon him a good deal of the lord and master.

My father was so delighted to see me, that he even left unfinished the perusal of an account of a great battle which the French, as if to verify the prediction of our friend, have lately gained in Flanders. Thank heaven, he was not there! Can you conceive the intrepid Lord B—— would stand to see his countrymen run away, or that he would have joined them in their flight? No, never; he would sooner have rushed on death a thousand times.

But, a-propos, of our friend,—our other friend hath not written for some time. Was not yesterday the day for the courier to come from Italy? If you receive any letters, I hope you will not forget I am a party concerned in the news.

Adieu, my dear cousin; I must set out. I shall expect your letters at Geneva; where we hope to arrive to-morrow by dinner-time. As for the rest, you may be assured, that, by some means or other, you shall be at the wedding; and that, if you absolutely will not come to Lausanne, I will come with my whole company
to

to plunder Clarens, and drink up all the wine that is to be found in the town.

L E T T E R CLII.

Mrs ORBE to Mrs WOLMAR.

ADMIRABLY lectured, my dear! you keep it up to a miracle! you seem to depend, however, too much on the salutary effect of your sermons. Without pretending to judge whether they would formerly have lulled your preceptor to sleep, I can assure you they do not put me to sleep at present; on the contrary, that which you sent me yesterday was so far from affecting me with drowsiness, that it kept me awake all night. I bar, however, the remarks of that Argus your husband, if he should see the letter. But I will write in some order, and I protest to you, you had better burn your fingers than shew it him.

Were I to be very methodical, and recapitulate with you article for article, I should usurp your privilege; I had better, therefore, set them down as they come into my head; to affect a little modesty also, and not give you too much fair play, I will not begin with our travellers, or the courier from Italy. At the worst, if it should so happen, I shall only have my letter to write over again, and to reverse it, by putting the beginning at the latter end. I am determined, however, to begin with the supposed Lady B—.

I declare I am offended at the very title; and
shall

shall I ever forgive St Preux for permitting her to take it, Lord B— for conferring it on her, or you for acknowledging it. Shall Julia Wolmar receive Lauretta Pisana into her house! permit her to live with her!—think of it again, child. Would not such a condescension in you be the most cruel mortification to her? Can you be ignorant that the air you breathe is fatal to infamy? Will the poor unfortunate dare to mix her breath with yours? will she dare to approach you? She would be as much affected by your presence, as a creature possessed would be at the sacred relics in the hand of the exorcist: your looks would make her sink into the earth; the very sight of you would kill her.

Far be it from me, however, to despise the unhappy Laura: on the contrary, I admire and respect her, the more as her reformation is heroic and extraordinary. But is it sufficient to authorise those mean comparisons by which you debase yourself; as if, in the indulgence of the greatest weakness, there was not something in true love that is a constant security to our person, and which made us tenacious of our honour? But I comprehend and excuse you. You have but a confused view of low and distant objects: you look down from your sublime and elevated station upon the earth, and see no inequalities on its surface. Your devout humility knows how to take an advantage even of your virtue.

But what end will all this serve? Will our natural sensations make the less impression? Will our self-love be less active? In spite of your arguments, you feel a repugnance at this match: you tax your sensations with pride; you
would

would strive against them, and attribute them to prejudice. But tell me, my dear, how long has the scandal attendant on vice consisted in mere opinion? What friendship do you think can possibly subsist between you and a woman before whom one cannot mention chastity, or virtue, without making her burst into tears of shame, without renewing her sorrows, without even insulting her penitence? Believe me, my dear, we may respect Laura, but we ought not to see her; to avoid her, is the regard which modest women owe to her merit; it would be cruel to make her suffer in our company.

Nay, farther: you say your heart tells you this marriage ought not to take place. Is not this as much as to tell you it will not. Your friend says nothing about it in his letter! in the letter which he wrote to me! and yet you say that letter is a very long one---and then comes the discourse between you and your husband----that husband of yours is a fly-boots, and ye are a couple of cheats thus to trick me out of the news ye have heard. But then your husband's sentiments!---methinks his sentiments were not so necessary; particularly for you, who have seen the letter; nor indeed were they for me, who have not seen it: for I am more certain of the conduct of your friend from my own sentiments, than from all the wisdom of philosophy.

See there now!---did I not tell you so? that intruder will be thrusting himself in, nobody knows how. For fear he should come again, however, as we are now got into his chapter, let us go through it, that it may be over, and we may have nothing to do with him again.

Let

Let us not bewilder ourselves with conjectures. Had you not been Julia, had not your friend been your lover, I know not what business he would now have had with you, nor what I should have had to do with him. All I know is, that if his ill stars had so ordered it that he had first made love to me, it had been all over with his poor head; for whether I am a fool or not, I should certainly have made him one. But what signifies what I might have been? let us come to what I am. Attached by inclination to you, from our earliest infancy, my heart has been in a manner absorbed by yours; affectionate and susceptible as I was, I of myself was incapable of love or sensibility. All my sentiments came from you; you alone stood in the place of the whole world, and I lived only to be your friend. Chaillot saw all this, and founded on it the judgment she passed on me. In what particular, my dear, have you found her mistaken?

You know I looked upon your friend as a brother: the lover of my friend, was to me as the son of my mother. Neither was it my reason, but my heart that gave him this preference. I should have been even more susceptible than I am, had I never experienced any other love. I caressed you, in caressing the dearest part of yourself; and the cheerfulness which attended my embraces, was a proof of their purity. For doth a modest woman ever behave so to the man she loves? did you behave thus to him? No, Julia, love in a female heart is cautious and timid; reserve and modesty are all its advances: it discloses by endeavouring to hide itself; and

whenever it confers the favour of its careſſes, it well knows how to ſet a value upon them. Friendſhip is prodigal, but love is avaricious and ſparing.

I acknowledge indeed, that too intimate connections at his age and mine are dangerous; but, with both our hearts engaged by the ſame object, we were ſo accuſtomed to place it between us, that, without annihilating you at leaſt, it was impoſſible for us to come together. Even that familiarity, ſo dangerous on every other occaſion, was then my ſecurity. Our ſentiments depend on our ideas, and when theſe have once taken a certain turn, they are not eaſily perverted. We had talked together too much in one ſtrain, to begin upon another; we had advanced too far to return back the way we came: love is jealous of its prerogative, and will make its own progreſs; it does not chuſe that friendſhip ſhould meet it half-way. In ſhort, I am ſtill of the ſame opinion, that criminal careſſes never take place between thoſe that have been long uſed to the endearing embraces of innocence.

In aid of my ſentiments, came the man deſtined by heaven to conſtitute the momentary happineſs of my life. You know, couſin, he was young, well made, honeſt, complaiſant, and ſollicitous to pleaſe: it is true, he was not ſo great a maſter in love as your friend; but it was me that he loved: and, when the heart is free, the paſſion which is addreſſed to ourſelves, hath always in it ſomething contagious. I returned his affections therefore, with all that remained of mine; and his ſhare was ſuch as left him no room to complain of his choice. With all this,
what

what had I to apprehend? I will even go so far as to confess, that the prerogatives of the husband, joined to the duties of a wife, relaxed for a moment the ties of friendship; and that, after my change of condition, giving myself up to the duties of my new station, I became a more affectionate wife than I was a friend: but in returning to you, I have brought back two hearts instead of one, and have not since forgot that I alone am charged with that double obligation.

What, my dear friend, shall I say farther? At the return of our old preceptor, I had, as it were, a new acquaintance to cultivate: methought I looked upon him with very different eyes; my heart fluttered as he saluted me, in a manner I had never felt before; and the more pleasure that emotion gave me, the more it made me afraid. I was alarmed at a sentiment which seemed criminal, and which perhaps would not have existed had it not been innocent. I too plainly perceived that he was not, nor could be, any longer your lover; I was too sensible that his heart was disengaged, and that mine was so too: you know the rest, my dear cousin; my fears, my scruples were, I see, as well known to you as to myself. My unexperienced heart was so intimidated by sensations so new to it, that I even reproached myself for the earnest desire I felt to rejoin you, as if that desire had not been the same before the return of our friend. I was uneasy that he should be in the very place where I myself most inclined to be, and believe I should not have been so much displeased to find myself less desirous of it, as at

conceiving that it was not entirely on your account.

At length, however, I returned to you, and began to recover my confidence. I was less ashamed of my weakness after having confessed it to you. I was even less ashamed of it in your company: I thought myself protected in turn, and ceased to be afraid of myself. I resolved, agreeable to your advice, not to change my conduct towards him. Certainly a greater reserve would have been a kind of declaration, and I was but too likely to let slip involuntary ones, to induce me to make any directly. I continued, therefore, to trifle with him through bashfulness, and to treat him familiarly through modesty: but perhaps all this, not being so natural as formerly, was not attended with the same propriety, nor exerted to the same degree. From being a trisler, I turned a downright fool; and what perhaps increased my assurance was, I found I could be so with impunity. Whether it was your example that inspired me, or whether it be that Julia refines every thing that approaches her, I found myself perfectly tranquil, while nothing remained of my first emotions, but the most pleasing, yet peaceful sensations, which required nothing more than the continuance of that calm I enjoyed.

Yes, my dear friend, I am as susceptible and affectionate as you; but I am so in a different manner. Perhaps, with more lively passions, I am less able to govern them; and that very cheerfulness, which has been so fatal to the innocence of others, has preserved mine. Not that it has been always easy, I confess; any
more

more than it is to remain a widow at my years, and not be sometimes sensible that the day-time constitutes but one half of our lives. Nay, notwithstanding the grave face you put on the matter, I imagine your case does not differ in that greatly for mine. Mirth and pleasantry may then afford no unseasonable relief; and perhaps be a better preservative than graver lessons. How many times, in the stilness of the night, when the heart is all open to itself, have I driven impertinent thoughts out of my mind, by studying tricks for the next day! how many times have I not averted the danger of a private conversation by an extravagant fancy! There is always, my dear, when one is weak, a time wherein gaiety becomes serious; but that time will not come to me. These are at least my sentiments of the matter, and what I am not ashamed to confess in answer to yours.

I readily confirm all that I said in the *elysium*, as to the growing passion I perceived, and the happiness I had enjoyed during the winter. I indulged myself freely in the pleasing reflections of being always in company with the person I loved, while I desired nothing farther; and, if that opportunity had subsisted, I should have coveted no other. My chearfulness was the effect of contentment, and not of artifice. I turned the pleasure of conversing with him into drollery, and perceived that in contenting myself with laughing, I was not paving the way for future sorrow.

I could not indeed help thinking sometimes, that my continual playing upon him gave him less real displeasure than he affected. The cun-

ning creature was not angry at being offended ; and if he was a long time before he could be brought to temper, it was only that he might enjoy the pleasures of being intreated. Again, I in my turn have frequently laid hold of such occasions, to express a real tenderness for him, appearing all the while to make a jest of him : so that you would have been puzzled to say which was the most of a child. One day I remember that you was absent, he was playing at chess with your husband, while I and the little French-woman were diverting ourselves at shuttlecock in the same room ; I gave her the signal, and kept my eye on our philosopher ; who, I found, by the boldness of his looks, and the readiness of his moves, had the best of the game. As the table was small, the chess-board hung over its edge ; I watched my opportunity, therefore, and, without seeming to design it, gave the board a knock with a back stroke of my racquet, and overturned the whole game on the floor. You never in your life saw a man in such a passion : he was even so enraged, that when I gave him his choice of a kiss or a box in the ear by way of penance, he sullenly turned away from me as I presented him my cheek. I asked pardon, but to no purpose : he was inflexible ; and I doubt not that he would have left me on my knees, had I condescended to kneel for it. I put an end to his resentment, however, by another offence, which made him forget the former, and we were better friends than ever.

I could never have extricated myself so well by any other means ; and I once perceived, that, if our play had become serious, it might have proved

proved too much so. This was one evening when he played with us that simple and affecting duo of Leo's *Vado a morir ben mio*. You sung indeed with indifference enough: but I did not; for just as we came to the most pathetic part of the song, he leaned forward, and as my hand lay upon the harpsichord, imprinted on it a kiss, whose impression I felt at my heart. I am not very well acquainted with the ardent kisses of love; but this I can say, that mere friendship, not even ours, ever gave or received any thing like that. After such moments, what is the consequence of reflecting on them in solitude, and of bearing him constantly in memory? for my part, I was so much affected at the time, that I sung out of tune, and put the music out. We went to dancing, I made the philosopher dance; we eat little or nothing; sat up very late; and, though I went to bed weary, I only dosed till morning.

I have therefore very good reason for not laying any restraint on my humour, or changing my manners. The time that will make such an alteration necessary is so near, that it is not worth while to anticipate it. The time to be prudish and reserved will come but too soon. While I am in my twenties, therefore, I shall make use of my privilege: for when once turned of thirty, people are no longer wild without being ridiculous; and your find-fault of a husband hath assurance enough to tell me already, that I shall be allowed but six months longer to dress a salad with my fingers. Patience! to retort his sarcasm, however, I tell him I will dress it for him in that manner for these six years to come;

come; and if I do, I protest to you he shall eat it.—But to return from my ramble.

If we have not the absolute command over our sentiments, we have at least some over our conduct. I could, without doubt, have requested of heaven a heart more at ease; but may I be able to my last hour, to plead at its dread tribunal, a life as innocent as that which I passed this winter! In fact, I have nothing in the least to reproach myself with, respecting the only man in whose power it might be to make me criminal. It is not quite the same, my dear, since his departure: being accustomed to think of him in his absence, I think of him every hour in the day, and, to confess the truth, find him more dangerous in idea than in person. When he is absent, I am over head and ears in love; when present, I am only whimsical. Let him return, and all my fears will vanish.

The chagrin his absence gives me, however, is not a little aggravated by my uneasiness at his dream. If you have placed all to the account of love, therefore, you are mistaken; friendship has had part in my uneasiness. After the departure of our friends, your looks were pale and changed; I expected you every moment to fall sick. Not that I am credulous: I am only fearful. I know very well, that a bad dream does not necessarily produce a sinister event; but I am always afraid lest such an event should succeed it. Not one night's rest could I get for that unlucky dream, till I saw you recover your former bloom. Could I have suspected the effects his anxiety would have had on me, without knowing any thing of it, I would certainly have

have given every thing I had in the world that he should have shewn himself when he came back so much like a fool from Villeneuve. At length, however, my fears vanished with your suspicious looks; your health and appetite having a greater effect on me than your pleasantries. The arguments these sustained at table, against my apprehensions, in time dissipated them. To increase our happiness, our friend is on his return, and I am in every respect delighted. His return, so far from alarming me, gives me confidence; and as soon as we see him again, I shall fear nothing for your life, nor my repose. In the mean time be careful, dear cousin, of my friend; and be under no apprehensions for yours; she will take care of herself, I will engage for her. And yet I have still a pain at my heart—I feel an oppression which I cannot account for. Ah my dear! to think that we may one day part for ever! that one may survive the other! how unhappy will she be on whom that lot shall fall! she will either remain little worthy to live, or lifeless before her death.

You will ask me, to what purpose is all this vain lamentation? You will say, “Fie on these ridiculous terrors! instead of talking of death, let us chuse a more entertaining topic, and talk about your marriage.” Your husband has indeed long entertained such a notion; and perhaps if he had never spoken of it to me, it would never have come into my head. I have since thought of it now and then, but always with disdain. It would be absolutely making an old woman of me; for, if I should have any children by a second marriage, I should certainly

ly conceit myself the grandmother of those of the first. You are certainly very good to take upon yourself so readily to spare the blushes of your friend, and to look upon your taking that trouble as an instance of your charitable benevolence. For my own part, nevertheless, I can see very well that all the reasons founded on your obliging solicitude are not equal to the least of mine against a second marriage.

To be serious, I am not mean-spirited enough to number among those reasons any reluctance I should have to break an engagement rashly made with myself, nor the fear of being censured for doing my duty, nor an inequality in point of fortune in a circumstance where that person reaps the greatest honour to whom the other would be obliged for his: but, without repeating what I have so often told you concerning my case of independency and natural aversion to the marriage-yoke, I will abide by only one objection, and this I draw from those sacred dictates which nobody in the world pays a greater regard to than yourself. Remove this obstacle, cousin, and I give up the point. Amidst all those airs of mirth and drollery, which give you so much alarm, my conscience is perfectly easy. The remembrance of my husband excites not a blush; I even take pleasure to think him a witness of my innocence; for why should I be afraid to do that now he is dead, which I used to do when he was living? But will this be the case, Julia, if I should violate those sacred engagements which united us; if I should swear to another that everlasting love, which I have so often sworn to him; if my divided heart should

should rob his memory of what it bestowed on his successor, and be incapable without offending one to discharge the obligations it owes the other? Will not that form, now so pleasing to my imagination, fill me with horror and affright? will it not be ever present to poison my delight? and will not his remembrance, which now constitutes the happiness of my life, be my future torment? With what face can you advise me to take a second husband, after having vowed never to do the like yourself; as if the same reasons which you give me, were not as applicable to yourself in the same circumstances? They were friends, you say, and loved each other. So much the worse. With what indignation will not his shade behold a man who was dear to him, usurp his rights, and seduce his wife from her fidelity? In short, though it were true that I owed no obligation to the deceased, should I owe none to the dear pledge of his love? and can I believe he would ever have chosen me, had he foreseen that I should ever have exposed his only child to see herself undistinguished among the children of another?

Another word, and I have done: Who told you, pray, that all the obstacles between us arise from me? In answering for him, have you not rather consulted your will than your power? Or, were you certain of his consent, do you make no scruple to offer me a heart exhausted by a former passion? Do you think that mine ought to be content with it, and that I might be happy with a man I could not make so? Think better of it, my dear cousin. Not requiring a greater return of love than I feel, I should
not

not be satisfied with less; and I am too virtuous a woman, to think the pleasing my husband a matter of indifference. What security have you then for the completion of your hopes? Is the pleasure he may take in my company, which may be only the effect of friendship; is that transitory delight, which at his age may arise only from the difference of sex: is this, I say, a sufficient foundation? If such pleasure had produced any lasting sentiment, is it to be thought he would have been so profoundly silent, not only to me, but to you, and even to your husband, by whom an eclaircissement of that nature could not fail of being favourably received. Has he ever opened his lips on this head to any one? In all the private conversations I have had with him, he talked of nobody but you. In those which you have had, did he ever say any thing of me? How can I imagine, that, if he had concealed a secret of this kind in his breast, I should not have perceived him to be under some constraint, or that it would not by some indiscretion or other have escaped him? Nay, since his departure, which of us does he most frequently mention in his letters? which of us is the subject of his dreams? I admire that you should think me so tender and susceptible, and should not at the same time suppose my heart would suggest all this. But I see through your device, my sweet friend; it is only to authorize your pretensions to reprisals, that you charge me with having formerly saved my heart at the expence of yours. But I am not so to be made the dupe of your subtilty.

Thus ends my confession; which I have made,
not

not to contradict, but to set you right. I have nothing farther to say on this head, than to acquaint you with my resolution. You now know my heart as well, if not better, than I do. My honour, my happiness, are equally dear to you as to myself; and, in the present tranquillity of your passions, you will be the best able to judge of the means to secure both the one and the other. Take my conduct therefore under your direction. I submit it entirely to you. Let us return to our natural state, and reciprocally change our employment; we shall both do the better for it: do you govern, and you shall find me tractable: let it be your place to direct what I should do, and it shall be mine to follow your directions. Take my heart, and inclose it up in yours; what business have inseparables for two?

But let us return to our travellers; though, to say truth, I have already said so much about one, that I hardly dare speak a word about the other, for fear you should remark too great a difference in my style, and that even my friendship for the generous Englishman should betray too much regard for the amiable Swift. Besides, what can I say about letters I have not seen? you ought at least to send me that of Lord B——. But you durst not send it without the other. It is very well. You might, however, have done better. Well, recommend me to your duennas of twenty: they are infinitely more tractable than those of thirty.

I must revenge myself, however, by informing you of the effect of your fine reserve. It has only made me imagine the letter in ques-

tion,—that letter which breathes such a tender—only a hundred times more tender than it probably is. Out of spite, I take pleasure in conceiving it filled with soft expressions which cannot be in it; so that if I am not passionately admired, I shall make you suffer for it.

After all, I cannot see with what face you can talk to me of the Italian post. You prove in your letter, that I was not in the wrong to wait for it, but for not having waited long enough. Had I stayed but one poor quarter of an hour longer, I should have met the packet, have laid hold of it first, and read it at my ease. It had then been my turn to make a merit of giving it you. But, since the grapes are so sour, you may keep the letters. I have two others which I would not change for them were they better worth reading than I imagine they are. There is that of Harriot, I can assure you, even exceeds your own; nor have either you or I, in all our lives, ever wrote any thing so pretty. And yet you give yourself airs forsooth of treating this prodigy as a little impertinent. Upon my word, I suspect that to arise from mere envy; and, since I have discovered in her this new talent, I purpose, before you spoil her writing as you have done her speech, to establish between her apartment and mine an Italian post, from whence I will have no pilfering of packets.

Adieu, my dear cousin, you will find inclosed the answers to your letters; which will give you no mean idea of my interest here. I would write to you something about this country and its inhabitants; but it is high time to put an end to this volume of a letter. You have be-
sides

sides quite perplexed me with your strange fancies. As we have five or six days longer to stay here, and I shall have time to give another look at what I have already seen, you will be no loser by the delay: and you may depend on my transmitting you another volume as big as this, before my departure.

L E T T E R CLIII.

Lord B—— to Mr WOLMAR.

NO! my dear Wolmar, you were not mistaken: our young friend is to be depended upon, but I am not: and I have paid dear for the experience that hath convinced me of it. Without his assistance I should have been a dupe to the very proof to which I put his fidelity. You know, that, to satisfy his notions of gratitude, and divert his mind with new objects, I pretended that my journey to Italy was of greater importance than it really was. To bid a final adieu to the attachments of my youth, and bring back a friend perfectly cured of his, were the fruits I promised myself from the voyage.

I informed you, that his dream at Villeneuve gave me some uneasiness for him. That dream made me even suspect the motives of his transport, on being told that you had chosen him preceptor of your children, and that he should pass the remainder of his life with you. The better to observe the effusions of his heart, I had at first removed all difficulties, by declaring my intention of settling also in your part of the world;

and thus I prevented any of those objections his friendship might have made on account of leaving me. A change in my resolutions, however, made me soon alter my tale.

He had not seen the marchioness thrice, before we were both agreed in our opinion of her. Unfortunate woman! possessed of noble qualities, but without virtue! her ardent, sincere passion at first affected me, and nourished mine; but her passion was tinged with the blackness of her soul, and inspired me in the end with horror.

When he had seen Laura, and knew her disposition, her beauty, her wit and unexampled attachment, I formed a resolution to make use of her to acquire a perfect knowledge of the situation of St Preux. If I marry Laura, said I to him, it is not my intention to carry her to London, where she may be known; but to a place where virtue is respected in whomsoever it is found: you will there discharge your duty of preceptor, and we shall still continue to live together. If I do not marry her, it is time for me nevertheless to think of settling. You know my house in Oxfordshire, and will make your choice, either to take upon you the education of Mr Wolmar's children, or to accompany me in my retirement. To this, he made me just such an answer as I expected; but I had a mind to observe his conduct. If, in order to spend his time at Clarens, he had promoted a marriage which he ought to have opposed, or, on the contrary, preferred the honour of his friend to his own happiness; in either case, I say, the experiment answered my end, and I
knew

knew what to think of the situation of his heart.

On trial, I found him to be such as I wished; firmly resolved against the project I pretended to have formed; and ready with all his arguments to oppose the match. I knew every argument that could be urged against it better than he did; but I was continually in her company, and was moved by her tenderness and affliction. My heart, totally disengaged from the marchioness, began to fix itself on her rival, by this constant intercourse. The sentiments of Laura increased the attachment she had before inspired; and I began to be ashamed of sacrificing to that prejudice I despised, the esteem which I was so well convinced was due to her merit; I began even to be in doubt, whether I had not laid myself under some obligation to do that merit justice, by the hopes I had given her, if not in words, at least by my actions. Though I never promised her any thing, yet to have kept her in suspense and expectation for nothing, would be to deceive her; and I could not help thinking such a deception extremely cruel. In short, annexing a kind of duty to my inclination, and consulting happiness more than reputation, I attempted to reconcile my passion to reason, and resolved to carry my pretended scheme as far as it would go, and even to execute it in reality if I could not recede without injustice.

After some time, however, I began to be more uneasy on account of St Preux, as he did not appear to act the part he had undertaken with that zeal I expected. Indeed he opposed my professed design of marriage, but took little pains to check my growing inclination; speak-

ing to me of Laura in such a strain of encouragement, as, at the same time that he appeared to dissuade me from marrying her, added fuel to the flame by increasing my affection. This inconsistency gave me some alarm; I did not think him so steady as before. He seemed shy of directly opposing my sentiments, gave way to my arguments, was fearful of giving offence, and indeed seemed to have lost all that intrepidity in doing his duty which the true passion for it inspires.

Some other observations which I made also, increased my distrust. I found out that he visited Laura unknown to me; and that, by their frequent signs, there was a secret understanding between them. On her part, the prospect of being united to the man she loved, seemed to give her no pleasure; I observed in her the same degree of tenderness indeed, but that tenderness was no longer mixed with joy at my approach; a gloomy sadness perpetually clouding her features. Nay, sometimes in the tenderest part of our conversations, I have caught her casting a side-glance on St Preux; on which a tear would often steal silently down her cheek, which she endeavoured to conceal from me. In short, they carried the matter so far, that I was at last greatly perplexed. What could I think? It is impossible, said I to myself, that I can all this while have been cherishing a serpent in my bosom? How far have I not reason to extend my suspicions, and return those he formerly entertained of me? Weak and unhappy as we are, our misfortunes are generally of our own seeking! why do we complain that bad men torment

ment us, while the good are so ingenious at tormenting each other!

All this operated but to induce me to come to a determination. For, though I was ignorant of the bottom of their intrigue, I saw the heart of Laura was still the same; and that proof of her affection endeared her to me the more. I proposed to come to an explanation with her before I put an end to the affair; but I was desirous of putting it off till the last moment, in order to get all the light I could possibly beforehand. As for St Preux, I was resolved to convince myself, to convince him, and in short to come at the truth of the matter before I took any step in regard to him; for it was easy to suppose that an infallible rupture must happen, and I was unwilling to place a good disposition, and a reputation of twenty years standing, in the balance against mere suspicions.

The marchioness was not ignorant of what passed; having her spies in the convent where Laura resides, who informed her of the report of her marriage. Nothing more was necessary to excite her rage. She wrote me threatening letters; nay, she went farther; but as it was not the first time she had done so, and we were on our guard, her attempts were fruitless. I had only the pleasure to see that our friend did not spare himself on this occasion; nor make any scruple to expose his own life to save that of his friend.

Overcome by the transports of her passion, the marchioness fell sick, and was soon past recovery; putting at once an end to her misfortunes and

and her guilt *. I could not help being afflicted to hear of her illness, and sent doctor Eswin to give her all the assistance in his power as a physician. St Preux went also to visit her on my behalf; but she would neither see one nor the other. She would not even bear to hear me named during her illness, and inveighed against me with the most horrid imprecations every time I was mentioned. I was grieved at heart for her situation, and felt my wounds ready to bleed afresh: reason however supported my spirits and resolution; but I should have been one of the worst of men, to think of marriage, while a woman, so dear to me, lay in that extremity. In the mean time, St Pr  ux, fearing I should not be able to resist the strong inclination I had to see her, proposed a journey to Naples; to which I consented.

The second day after our arrival there, he came into my chamber with a fixed and grave countenance, holding a letter in his hand, which he seemed to have just received. I started up, and cried out, The marchioness is dead! Would to God, said he coldly, she were! it were better not to exist, than to exist only to do evil: but it is not of her I bring you news; though what I bring concerns you nearly: be pleased, my Lord, to give me an uninterrupted hearing. I was silent, and thus he began.

In honouring me with the sacred name of friend, you taught me how to deserve it. I have
ac-

* By a letter not published in this collection, it appears that Lord B—— was of opinion, that the souls of the wicked are annihilated in death.

acquitted myself of the charge you intrusted with me; and seeing you ready to forget yourself, have ventured to assist your memory. I saw you unable to break one connection but by entering into another; both equally unworthy of you. Had an unequal marriage been the only point in question, I should only have reminded you, that you was a peer of England; and advised you either to renounce all pretensions to public honour, or to respect public opinion. But a marriage so scandalous! can you? no, my Lord, you will not make so unworthy a choice. It is not enough that your wife should be virtuous, her reputation should be unstained.— Believe me, a wife for Lord B—— is not easily to be found. Read that, my Lord, and see what I have done.

He then gave me a letter. It was from Laura. I opened it with emotion, and read as follows.

“ My Lord,

“ Love at length prevailed, and you were willing to marry me: but I am content. Your friend has pointed out my duty, and I perform it without regret: in dishonouring you, I should have lived unhappily; in leaving your honour unstained, methinks I partake of it. The sacrifice of my felicity to a duty so severe, makes me forget even the shame of my youth. Farewell! from this moment I am no longer in your power or my own. Adieu, my Lord, for ever! Pursue me not in my retreat to despair, but hear my last request: Confer not on any other woman

man that honour I could not accept. There was but one heart in the world made for yours, and it was that of

Laura."

The agitation of mind I was in, on reading this letter, prevented me from speaking. He took the advantage of my silence, to tell me, that after my departure, she had taken the veil in the convent where she boarded; that the court of Rome being informed that she was going to be married to a Lutheran, had given orders to prevent his seeing her; and confessed to me frankly, that he had taken all these measures in concert with herself. I did not oppose your designs, continued he, with all the power I might; fearing your return to the marchioness, and being desirous of combating your old passion by that which you entertained for Laura. In seeing you run greater lengths than I intended, I applied to your understanding: but having from my own experience but too just reason to distrust the power of argument, I founded the heart of Laura; and finding in it all that generosity which is inseparable from true love, I prevailed on her to make this sacrifice. The assurance of being no longer the object of your contempt, inspired her with a fortitude which renders her the more worthy of your esteem. She has done her duty, you must now do yours.

Then eagerly embracing and pressing me to his heart, ' My honoured friend, says he, I read
' in our common destiny those laws which heaven dictates to both, and requires us to obey.
' The empire of love is at an end, and that of
' friend-

‘ friendship begins : my heart attends only to
‘ its sacred call, it knows no other tie than that
‘ which unites me to you. Fix on whatever
‘ place of residence you please, Clarens, Ox-
‘ ford, London, Paris, or Rome ; it is equal
‘ to me, so we but live together. Go whither
‘ you will, seek an asylum wherever you think
‘ fit, I will follow you throughout the world :
‘ for I solemnly protest, in the face of the living
‘ God, that till death I will never leave you.’

I was greatly affected at the zeal and affection of this young man ; his eyes sparkling with pleasure on this effusion of his heart. I forgot at once both the marchioness and Laura. Is there indeed any thing in the world to be regretted, while one preserves so dear a friend ? Indeed, I was now fully convinced, by the part he so readily took on this occasion, that he was entirely cured of his ancient passion ; and that the pains you had taken, were not thrown away upon him. In short, I could not doubt, by the solemn engagement he had thus voluntarily made, that his attachment to me was truly sincere ; and that his virtue had entirely got the better of his inclinations. I can therefore bring him back with confidence. Yes, my dear Wolmar, he is worthy to educate youth ; and what is more, of being received into your house.

A few days after, I received an account of the death of the marchioness ; at which I was but little affected, as she had indeed been long dead in respect to me. I had hitherto regarded marriage as a debt, which every man contracts at the time of his birth, with his country and mankind ;

kind ; for which reason, I had resolved to marry, the less out of inclination than duty ; but I am now of another opinion. The obligation to marriage, I now conceive, is not so universal, but that it depends on the rank and situation which every man holds in life. Celibacy is, doubtless, wrong in the common people, such as manufacturers, husbandmen, and others, who are really useful and necessary to the state. But for those superior orders of men, who compose the legislature and the magistracy, to which every other aspires, and which are always sufficiently supplied, it is both lawful and expedient. For were the rich all obliged to marry, the increase of number among those subjects which are a dead weight on the state, would only tend to its depopulation. Mankind will always find masters enough, and England will sooner want labourers than peers.

I think myself at full liberty, therefore, in the rank to which I was born, to indulge my own inclination in this respect. At my age, it is too late to think of repairing the shocks my heart hath sustained from love. I shall devote my future hours therefore to friendship, the pleasures of which I can no where cultivate so well as at Clarens. I accept, therefore, your obliging offers, on such conditions, as my fortune ought to add to yours, that it may not be useless to me. Besides, after the engagements St Preux hath entered into, I know no other method of detaining him with you, but by residing with you myself ; and if ever he grows tired or troublesome, it will be sufficient for me to leave you, to make him follow. The only embarrassment

I shall

I shall in this case lie under, respects my customary voyages to England; for though I have no longer any interest in the house of peers, yet while I am one of the number, I think it necessary I should continue to do my duty as such. But I have a faithful friend among my brother-peers, whom I can empower to answer for me in ordinary cases; and on extraordinary occasions, wherein I think it my duty to go over in person, I can take my pupil along with me; and even he, his pupils with him, when they grow a little bigger, and you can prevail on yourself to trust them with us. Such voyages cannot fail of being useful to them, and will not be so very long as to make their absence afflicting to their mother.

I have not shewn this letter to St Preux, nor do I desire you should shew every part of it to the ladies: it is proper that my scheme to sound the heart of our friend should be known only to you and me. I would not have you conceal any thing from them, however, that may do honour to this worthy youth, even though it should be discovered at my expence. Adieu, my dear Wolmar.

I have sent the designs and drawings for my pavilion, for you to reform, alter, and amend, as you please; but I would have you to execute them immediately, if possible. I would have struck out the music-room; for I have now lost almost all pretensions to taste, and am careless of amusement: at the request of St Preux, however, I have left it, as he proposes now and then to exercise your children there. You will receive also some few books, to add to

290 J U L I A ; or,

your library. But what novelty will you find in books? No, my dear Wolmar, you only want to understand natures volume, to be the wisest of men.

L E T T E R CLIV.

A N S W E R.

I WAS impatient, my dear B——, to come to the end of your adventures. It seemed very strange to me, that, after having so long resisted the force of your inclinations, you had waited only for a friend to assist you to give way to them: though to say truth, we find ourselves often more weak when supported by others, than when we rely solely on our own strength. I confess, however, I was greatly alarmed by your last letter, when you told me your marriage with Laura was a thing absolutely determined. Not but that, in spite of this assurance, I still entertained some doubts of the event; and if my suspicions had been disappointed, I would never have seen St Preux again. As it is, you have both acted as I flattered myself you would; and have so fully justified the good opinion I had of you, that I shall be delighted whenever you think proper to return, and settle here agreeable to the design we had planned. Come, ye uncommon friends! come to increase and partake of the happiness we here enjoy. However flattering may be the hopes of those who believe in a future state, for my part, I had rather enjoy the present in their company; nay, I perceive
you

you are both more agreeable to me with the tenets you possess, than you would be if unhappy enough to think as I do.

As to our friend, you know what were my sentiments of him at your departure. There was no need to make any experiment on his heart to settle my judgment concerning him : for my proof had been before made, and I thought I knew him as well as it was possible for one man to know another. I had, besides, more than one reason to place a confidence in him ; and was more secure of him than he was of himself. For though he seems to have followed your example in renouncing matrimony, you will perhaps find reason here to prevail on him to change his system. But I will explain myself farther on this head when I see you.

With respect to yourself, I think your sentiments on celibacy quite new and refined. They may, for aught I know, be judicious also, when applied to political institutions, intended to balance and keep in æquilibrium the relative powers of states ; but I am in doubt, whether they are not more subtle than solid, when applied to dispense with the obligations that individuals lie under to the laws of nature. It seems to me that life is a blessing we receive on condition of transmitting it to our successors ; a kind of tenure which ought to pass from generation to generation ; and that every one who had a father, is indispensably obliged to become one. Such has been hitherto your opinion also ; it was one of your motives for going to Italy : but I know from whence you derive your new system of philosophy ; there is an argument in Laura's

letter, which your heart knows not how to invalidate.

Our sprightly cousin has been for these eight or ten days past at Geneva, with her relations, on family-affairs: but we daily expect her to return. I have told my wife as much as was expedient she should know of your letter. We had learnt of Mr Miol, that your marriage was broken off; but she was ignorant of the part St Preux had in that event; and you may be assured it will give her great pleasure to be informed of all he has done to merit your beneficence, and justify your esteem. I have shewn her the plan and designs for your pavilion, in which she thinks there is much taste. We propose to make some little alterations, however, as the ground requires; which, as they will make your lodging the more convenient, we doubt not you will approve. We wait, nevertheless, for the sanction of Clara, before we resolve; for, without her, you know there is nothing to be done here. In the mean time, I have set the people to work, and hope to have the masonry pretty well advanced before winter.

I thank you for your books; but I no longer read those I am master of, and it is too late in life for me to begin to study those I do not understand. I am, however, not quite so ignorant as you would make me. The only volume of nature's works which I read, is the heart of man; of my abilities for comprehending which, my friendship for you is a sufficient proof.

L E T-

L E T T E R C L V .

Mrs ORBE to Mrs WOLMAR.

MY stay here, my dear cousin, gives me a world of anxieties ; the worst of all which is, that the agreeableness of the place would induce me to stay longer. The city is delightful, its inhabitants hospitable, and their manners courteous ; while liberty, which I love of all things, seems to have taken refuge amongst them. The more I know of this little state, the more I find an attachment to one's country agreeable ; and pity those who, pretending to call themselves of this or that country, have no attachment to any. For my part, I perceive, that, if I had been born in this, I should have had truly a Roman soul. As it is, I dare not, however, pretend to say that

Rome is no more at Rome, but where I dwell ;

For I am afraid you will be malicious enough, to think the contrary. But why need we talk always about Rome, and Rome ? the subject of this letter shall be Geneva.

I shall say nothing about the face of the country ; it is much like ours, except that it is less mountainous, and more rural. Nor shall I say any thing about the government : my good father will, doubtless, give you enough of it ; as he is employed here all day long, in the fulness of his heart, talking politics with the magistrates ; and I find him not a little mortified that the Gazette so seldom makes mention of Geneva. You

may judge of the tediousness of their conversation, by the length of my letters: for, when I am wearied with their discourse, I leave them; and, in order to divert myself, am tiresome to you.

All I remember of their long conferences is, that they hold in high esteem the great good sense which prevails in this city. When we regard indeed the mutual action and re-action of all parts of the state, which afford a reciprocal balance to each other, it is not to be doubted that there are greater abilities employed in the government of this little republic than in that of some great kingdoms, where every thing supports itself by its own proper strength, and where the reins of administration may be thrown into the hands of a blockhead, without any danger to the constitution. I can assure you, this is not the case here. I never hear any body talk to my father about the famous ministers of great courts, without thinking of the wretched musician who thundered away upon our great organ at Lausanne, and thought himself a prodigious able hand because he made a great noise. The people here have only a little spinnet; but in general they make good harmony, though the instrument be now and then a little out of tune.

Neither shall I say any thing about—but with telling you what I shall not say, I shall never have done. To begin then with something, that I may sooner come to a conclusion: Of all people in the world, those of Geneva are the most easily known and characterised. Their manners, and even their vices, are mixed with a certain frankness peculiar to themselves. They
are

are conscious of their natural goodness of heart, and that makes them not afraid to appear such as they are. They have generosity, sense, and penetration: but they are apt to love money too well; a fault which I attribute to their situation and circumstances, which make it so necessary; the territory of this State not producing a sufficient nourishment for its inhabitants. Hence it happens that the natives of Geneva, who are scattered up and down Europe to make their fortunes, copy the airs of foreigners; and, having adopted the vices of the countries where they have lived, bring them home in triumph with their wealth *. Thus the luxury of other nations makes them despise the simplicity of their own; its spirit and liberty appear ignoble; and they forge themselves chains of gold, not as marks of slavery, but as ornaments of pride.

But what have I to do with these confounded politics? Indeed here I am stunned with them, and have them constantly rung in my ears. I hear nothing else talked of; unless when my father is absent, which never happens except when the post arrives. It is ourselves, my dear, nevertheless, that infect every place we go to; for, as to the conversation of the people, it is generally useful and agreeable; indeed there is little to be learned even from books, which may not here be acquired by conversation. The manners of the English have reached as far as this country; and the men, living more separate from the women than in ours, contract among themselves

a

* At present they do not take the trouble to seek the vices of foreigners; the latter are ready enough to bring them.

a graver turn, and have more solidity in their discourse. This advantage is attended, nevertheless, with an inconvenience that is very soon experienced. They are extremely prolix, formal, sententious, and argumentative. Instead of writing, like Frenchmen, as they speak, they on the contrary, speak as they write. They declaim, instead of talking; and one thinks they are always going to support a Thesis. They divide their discourse into chapters and sections, and take the same method in their conversation as they do in their books. They speak as if they were reading, strictly observing etymological distinctions, and pronouncing their words exactly as they are spelt: in short, their conversations consist of harangues, and they prattle as if they were preaching.

But what is the most singular, is, that, with this dogmatical and frigid air in their discourse, they are lively, impetuous, and betray strong passions; nay, they would express themselves well enough upon sentimental subjects, if they were not too particular in words, or knew how to address the heart. But their periods and their commas are insupportable; and they describe so composedly the most violent passions, that, when they have done, one looks about one to see who is affected.

In the mean time, I must confess I am bribed a little to think well of their hearts, and to believe they are not altogether void of taste. For you must know, as a secret, that a very pretty gentleman for a husband, and, as they say, very rich, hath honoured me with his regards; and I have more gratitude and politeness than to call
in

in question what he has told me. Had he but come eighteen months sooner, what pleasure should I have taken in having a sovereign for my slave, and in turning the head of a noble Lord! but at present, mine is not clear enough to make that sport agreeable.

But to return to that taste for reading which makes the people of Geneva think. It extends to all ranks and degrees amongst them, and is of advantage to all. The French read a great deal; but they read only new books; or rather they run them over, less for the sake of knowing what they contain, than to have it to say they have read them. On the contrary, the readers at Geneva peruse only books of merit; they read, and digest what they read; making it their business to understand, not to criticise upon them. Criticisms and the choice of books are made at Paris; while choice books are almost the only ones that are read at Geneva. By this means, their reading has less variety and is more profitable. The women, on their part, employ a good deal of their time also in reading*; and their conversation is affected by it, but in a different manner. The fine ladies are affected, and set up for wits here, as well as with us. Nay, the petty citizens themselves learn from their books a kind of methodical chit-chat, a choice of words which one is surprised to hear from them, as we are sometimes with the prattle of forward children. They must unite all the good sense of
the

* It is to be remembered that these letters were written some years ago; a circumstance, I am afraid, that will be often suggested to the reader.

the men, all the sprightliness of the women, and all the wit common to both; or the former will appear a little pedantic, and the latter prudish.

As I was looking out of my window yesterday, I overheard two tradesmens daughters, both very pretty, talking together in a manner sprightly enough to attract my attention. I listened, and heard one of them propose to the other, laughing, to write a journal of their transactions. "Yes," replied the other immediately, a journal of a morning and a comment at night." What say you, cousin? I know not if this be the style of tradesmens daughters; but I know one must be taken up greatly indeed, not to be able, during the whole day, to make more than a comment on what has passed. I fancy this last had read the Arabian Nights Entertainments.

Thus with a style a little elevated, the women of Geneva are lively and satyrical; and one sees here the effect of the nobler passions, as much as in any city in the world. Even in the simplicity of their dress there is taste; they are graceful also in their manners, and agreeable in conversation. As the men are less gallant than affectionate, the women are less coquettish than tender; their susceptibility gives, even to the most virtuous among them, an agreeable and refined turn, which reaches the heart, and thence deduces all its refinement. So long as the ladies of Geneva preserve their own manners, they will be the most amiable women in Europe; but they are in danger of being soon all Frenchified, and then French-women will be more agreeable than they.

Thus every thing goes to ruin, when manners
grow

grow corrupted. Even taste depends on morals, and disappears with them, giving way to affected and pompous pretensions that have no other foundation than fashion. True wit also lies nearly under the same circumstances. It is not the modesty of our sex that obliges us to make use of address to resist the arts of men: and, if they are reduced to make use of artifice to excite our attention, have we less occasion for ingenuity to seem not to understand them? Is it not the men who set out our tongues and wits at liberty; who make us so keen at repartee, and oblige us to turn their persons and pretensions into ridicule? You may say what you will, but I maintain it, that a certain coquettish air and malicious raillery confounds a gallant much more than silence or contempt. What pleasure have I not taken in seeing a discontented Celadon blush, stammer, and lose himself at every word; while the shafts of ridicule, less flaming but more pointed than those of love, flew about him like hail; in seeing him shot through and through with icicles, whose coldness added to the smart of the wounds! even you yourself, who never loved to give pain, do you believe your mild and ingenuous behaviour, your timid, gentle looks, conceal less roguery and art than my hoydening? Upon my word, my dear, I much doubt, with all your hypocritical airs, if an account were taken of all the lovers you and I have made fools of, whether yours would not be the longer list. I cannot help laughing every time I think of that poor Confians, who came to me in such a passion to reproach you with having too great a regard for
him.

him. She is so obliging to me, says he, that I know not what to complain of; and declines my pretensions with so much good sense, that I am ashamed of finding myself so unable to reply to her arguments; in short, she is so much my friend, that I find myself incapable of supporting the character of her lover.

I believe there is no place in the world where married people agree better, and are better managers, than in this city: here a domestic life is peaceful and agreeable; the husbands are in general obliging, and the wives almost Julias. Here your system really exists. The two sexes employ and amuse themselves so differently, that they are never tired with each other's customs and company, but meet again with redoubled pleasure. This heightens the enjoyment of the wife; abstinence from what we delight in, is a tenet of your philosophy; it is indeed the epicurism of reason.

Unhappily, however, this ancient modesty begins a little to decline. The sexes begin to associate more frequently, they approach in person, and their hearts recede. It is here as with us, every thing is a mixture of good and bad, but in different proportions. The virtues of the natives of this country are of its own production; their vices are exotic. They are great travellers, and easily adopt the customs and manners of other nations; they speak other languages with facility, and learn without difficulty their proper accent; nevertheless, they have a disagreeable drawling tone in the pronunciation of their own; particularly among the women, who travel but little. More humbled by their
in-

insignificance, than proud of their liberty, they seem among foreigners to be ashamed of their country, and are therefore in a hurry, as one may say, to naturalise themselves in that where they happen to reside; and perhaps the character they have of being avaricious and selfish, contributes not a little to this false shame. It would be better, without doubt, to wipe off the stain by a disinterested example, than to scandalise their fellow-citizens by being ashamed of their country. But they despise the place of their nativity, even while they render it estimable; and are still more in the wrong not to give their city the honour of their own personal merit.

Nevertheless, however avaricious they may be, they are not accused of amassing fortunes by low and servile means: they seldom attach themselves to the great, or dance attendance at courts; personal slavery being as odious to them as that of the community. Pliant and flexible as Alcibiades, they are equally impatient of servitude; and, though they adopt the customs of other nations, they imitate the people without being slaves to the prince. They are chiefly employed in trade, because that is the surest road to wealth, consistent with liberty. And this great object of their wishes makes them often bury the talents with which they are prodigally endowed by nature. This brings me back to the beginning of my letter. They have ingenuity and courage, are lively and penetrating, nor is there any thing virtuous or great which surpasses their comprehension and abilities. But, more passionately fond of money than of honour, in order to live in abundance they die in obscurity; and the on-

ly example they leave to their children, is the love of those treasures which for their sakes they have amassed.

All this I learn from the natives themselves; for they speak of their own characters very impartially. For my part, I know not what they may be abroad, but at home they are an agreeable people; and I know but one way to quit Geneva without regret. Do you know, cousin, what this is? you may affect as much ignorance and humility as you please; if you should say you have not already guessed, you certainly would tell a fib. The day after to-morrow our jovial company will embark in a pretty little ship, fitted out for the occasion: for we chuse to return by water on account of the pleasantness of the season, and that we may be altogether. We purpose to pass the first night at Morges, to be the next day at Lausanne, on account of the marriage-ceremony, and the day following to be at — you know where. When you see at a distance the flags flying, the torches flaming, and hear the cannon roar; I charge you skud about the house like a mad thing, and call the whole family to arms! to arms! the enemy! the enemy is at hand!

P. S. Although the distribution of the apartments incontestibly belongs to me as house-keeper, I will give it up to you on this occasion; insisting only that my father be placed in those of Lord B—— on account of his charts and maps; with which I desire it may be compleatly hung from the ceiling to the floor.

L E T.

LETTER CLVI.

From Mrs WOLMAR.

WHAT delightful sensations do I experience in beginning this letter! It is the first time in my life that I ever wrote to you without fear or shame! I am proud of the friendship which now subsists between us, as it is the fruit of an unparalleled conquest, over a fatal passion: a passion which may sometimes be overcome, but is very rarely refined into friendship. To relinquish, when honour requires it, that which was once dear to us, may be done by the efforts of ordinary minds; but to have been what we once were to each other, and to become what we now are, this is a triumph indeed. The motive for ceasing to love may possibly be a vicious one; but that which converts the most tender passion into as sincere a friendship, cannot be equivocal, cannot be but virtuous.

Would we ever have arrived at this of ourselves? never, never, my good friend; it had been rashness to attempt it. To avoid each other was the first article of our duty, and which nothing should have prevented us from performing. We might without doubt have continued mutual esteem; but we must have ceased to write, or to converse. All thoughts of each other must have been suppressed, and the greatest regard we could have reciprocally shewn, had been to break off all correspondence.

But, instead of that, what is our present situation? Can there be on earth a more agreeable,

one, and do we not reap a thousand times a-day the reward of our self-denial? To see, to love each other, to be sensible of our bliss to pass our days together in fraternal intimacy and peaceful innocence; to think of each other without remorse, to speak without blushing; to do honour to that attachment for which we have been so often reproached; this is the point at which we are at last arrived. O my friend! how far in the career of honour have we already run! let us resolve to persevere, and finish our race as we have begun.

And to whom are we indebted for such extraordinary happiness? You know it well. I have seen your susceptible heart overflow with gratitude at the goodness of the best of men, to whom both you and I have been so greatly obliged; a goodness that does not lay us under fresh obligations, but only renders those more dear which were before sacred. The only way to acknowledge his favours, is to merit them; for the only value he sets on them consists in their emolument to us. Let us then reward our benefactor by our virtue; for this is all he requires, and therefore all we owe him. He will be satisfied with us and with himself, in having restored us to reason and to ourselves.

Permit me, now, to lay before you a picture of your future situation, that you may examine it if there be any thing in it to make you apprehensive of danger. Yes, worthy youth, if you respect the cause of virtue, attend with a chaste ear to the counsels of your friend. I tremble to enter upon a subject in which I am sorry to engage; but how shall I be silent without betraying

ing my friend? will it not be too late to warn you of the danger when you are already entangled in the snare? Yes, my friend, I am the only person in the world who is intimate enough with you to present it to your view. Have I not a right to talk to you as a sister, as a mother?

Your career, you tell me, is finished; if so, its end is premature. Though your first passion be extinguished, your sensibility still remains; and your heart is the more to be suspected, as its only cause of restraint no longer exists. A young man of great ardour and susceptibility resolves to live continent and chaste; he knows, he feels, he has a thousand times said, that fortitude of mind, which is productive of every virtue, depends on the purity of sentiment which supports it. As love preserved him from vice in his youth, his good sense must secure him in manhood; however severe may be the duty enjoined him, he knows there is a pleasure arising from it, that will compensate its rigour; and, though it be necessary to enter the conflict when conquest is in view, can he do less now out of piety to God than he did before out of regard to a mistress? Such I imagine is your way of reasoning, and such the maxims you adopt for your future conduct: for you have always despised those persons who, content with outward appearances, have one doctrine for theory and another for practice, and who lay upon others a burden of moral duties which they themselves are unwilling to bear.

But what kind of life has such a prudent, virtuous man made choice of, in order to comply with those rules he has prescribed? Less a phi-

losopher than a man of probity and a Christian, he has not surely taken his vanity for a guide: he certainly knows that it is much easier to avoid temptations, than to withstand them. Does he therefore avoid all dangerous opportunities? does he shun those objects which are most likely to move his passions? has he that humble diffidence of himself which is the best security to virtue? Quite the contrary; he does not hesitate rashly to rush on danger. At thirty years of age, he is going to seclude himself from the world, in company with women of his own age; one of which was once too dear to him for him ever to banish the dangerous idea of their former intimacy from his mind; another of whom has lived with him in great familiarity, and a third attached to him by all those ties which obligations conferred excite in grateful minds. He is going to expose himself to every thing that can renew those passions which are but imperfectly extinguished; he is going to entangle himself in those snares which he ought, of all others, to avoid. There is not one circumstance attending his situation which ought not to make him distrust his own strength, nor one which will not render him for ever contemptible should he be weak enough to be off his guard for a moment. Where then is that great fortitude of mind, in which he presumes to place such confidence? In what instance has it hitherto appeared that he can be answerable for it, for the future? Did he acquire it at Paris, in the house of the colonel's lady? or was he influenced by it last summer at Meillerie? Has it been his security during the winter, against
the

the charms of another object, or this spring against the terrifying apprehensions of a dream? By the slender assistance it once afforded him, is there any reason to suppose it will always bring him off victorious? He may know, when his duty requires, how to combat the passions of a friend; but will he be as capable of combating his own? Alas! let him learn from the best half of his life to think modestly of the other.

One may support a state of violence and constraint for a while. Six months, for instance, a year, is nothing; fix any certain time, and we may presume to hold out. But when that state is to last as long as we live, where is the fortitude that can support itself under it? Who can sustain a constant state of self-denial! O my friend! a life of pleasure is short, but a life of virtue is exceeding long. We must be incessantly on our guard. The instant of enjoyment is soon passed, and never more returns; that of doing evil passes away too, but as constantly returns, and is ever present. Forget ourselves for a moment, and we are undone. Is it in such a state of danger and trial, that our days can pass away in happiness and tranquillity? or is it for such as have once escaped the danger to expose themselves again?

What future occasions may not arise as hazardous as those you have escaped, and, what is worse, equally unforeseen? Do you think the monuments of danger exist only at Meillerie? they are in every place where we are; we carry them about with us: yes, you know too well that a susceptible mind interests the whole universe in its passion; and that every object here
will

will excite our former ideas, and remind us of our former sensations.

I am presumptuous enough, however, to believe, that will never happen to me; and my heart is ready enough to answer for yours. But, though it may be above meanness, is that easy heart of yours above weakness? and am I the only person here it will cost you pains to *respect*? Forget not, St Preux, that all who are dear to me are intitled to be respected as myself; reflect that you are continually to bear the innocent play of an amiable woman; think of the eternal disgrace you will deservedly fall into, if your heart should go astray for a moment, and you should harbour any designs on her you have so much reason to honour.

I would have your duty, your word, and your ancient friendship restrain you. The obstacles which virtue throws in your way, may serve to discourage idle hopes; and, by the help of your reason, you may suppress your fruitless wishes: but would you thence be freed from the influence of sense, and the snares of imagination? Obligated to respect us both and to forget our sex, you will be liable to temptation from our servants, and might perhaps think yourself justified by the condescension: but would you be in reality less culpable? or can the difference of rank change the nature of a crime? on the contrary, you would debase yourself the more, as the means you might employ would be more ignoble. But is it possible that you should be guilty of such means! no, perish the base man, who would bargain for an heart, and make love a mercenary passion! Such men are the cause of all the crimes

crimes which are committed by debauchery : for she who is once bought, will be ever after to be sold ; and, amidst the shame into which she is inevitably plunged, who may most properly be said to be the author of her misery, the brutal wretch who insults her in a brothel, or her seducer who shewed her the way thither, by first paying a price for her favours ?

I will add another consideration' which, if I am not mistaken, will affect you. You have been witness of the pains I have taken to establish order and decency in my family. Tranquillity and modesty, happiness and innocence, prevail throughout the whole. Think, my friend, of yourself, of me, of what we were, of what we are, and what we ought to be. Shall I have it one day to say, in regretting my lost labour, It is to you I owe the disorder of my house ?

Let us, if it be necessary, go farther, and sacrifice even modesty to a true regard for virtue. Man is not made for a life of celibacy ; and it is very difficult, in a state so contrary to that of nature, not to fall into some public or private irregularity. For how shall a man be always on his guard against an intestine enemy ? Look upon the rash votaries of other countries, who enter into a solemn vow not to be men. To punish them for their presumption, heaven abandons them to their own weakness : they call themselves saints, for entering into engagements which necessarily make them sinners ; their continence is only pretended, and, for affecting to set themselves above the duties of humanity, they debase themselves below it. It is easy to
stand

stand upon punctilio, and affect a nice observance of laws which are kept only in appearance*; but a truly virtuous man cannot but perceive that his essential duties are sufficient without extending them to works of supererogation. It is, my dear St Preux, the true humility of a Christian, always to think his duty too much for his strength: apply this rule, and you will be sensible, that a situation which might only alarm another man, ought to make you tremble. The less you are afraid, the more reason you have to fear; and if you are not in some degree deterred by the severity of your duty, you can have little hopes of being able to fulfil it.

Such are the perils that threaten you here. I know that you will never deliberately venture to do ill; and the only evils you have cause to apprehend are those which you cannot foresee. I do not however bid you draw your conclusions solely from my reasoning; but recommend it to your mature consideration. If you can answer me in a manner satisfactory to yourself, I shall be satisfied; if you can rely upon yourself, I too shall rely upon you. Tell me that you have overcome all the foibles of humanity, that you are an angel; and I will receive you with open arms.

But

* Some men are continent without having any merit in it, others are so through virtue, and I doubt not there are many Romish priests in the latter situation: but to impose a state of celibacy on so numerous a body of men as the clergy of that church, it is not to bid them abstain from women, but to be content with the wives of other men. I am really surpris'd that in countries where morals are held in any esteem, the legislature should tolerate such scandalous engagements.

But is it possible for you, whilst a man, to lead a life of continual self-denial and mortification? to have almost the most severe duties to perform? to be constantly on your guard with those whom you so sincerely love? no, no, my amiable friend; happy is he who in this life can make one single sacrifice to virtue. I have one in view, worthy of a man who has struggled and suffered in its cause. If I do not presume too far, the happiness I have ventured to design for you, will repay every obligation of my heart, and be even greater than you would have enjoyed, had providence favoured our first inclinations. As I cannot make you an angel myself, I would unite you to one who would be the guardian of your heart, who will refine it, re-animate it to virtue, and under whose auspices you may securely live with us in this peaceful retreat of angelic innocence. You will not, I conceive, be under much difficulty to guess who it is I mean, as it is an object which has already got footing in the heart which it will one day entirely possess, if my project does not prove abortive.

I foresee all the difficulties attending it, without being discouraged, as the design is virtuous. I know the influence I have over my fair friend, and think I shall not abuse it by exerting my power in your favour. But you are acquainted with her resolutions; and before I attempt to alter them, I ought to be well assured of your sentiments, that while I am endeavouring to prevail on her to permit your addresses, I may be able to answer for your love and gratitude; for, if the inequality which fortune has made
between

between you deprives you of the privilege of making such a proposal yourself, it is still more improper that this privilege should be granted before we know how you will receive it.

I am not unacquainted with your delicacy; and know, that if you have any objections to make, they will respect her rather than yourself. But banish your idle scruples. Do you think you can be more tenacious of my friend's reputation, than I am? No, however dear you are to me, you need not be apprehensive lest I should prefer your interest to her honour. But as I value the esteem of people of sense, so I despise the prejudices and inconsiderate censures of the multitude, who are ever led by the false glare of things, and are strangers to real virtue. Were the difference in point of fortune between you a hundred times greater than it is, there is no rank in life to which great talents and good behaviour have not a right to aspire: and what pretensions can a woman have to disdain to make that man her husband, whom she is proud to number among her friends? You know the sentiments of us both in these matters. A false modesty, and the fear of censure, lead to more bad actions than good ones; for virtue never blushes at any thing but vice.

As to yourself, that pride which I have sometime remarked in you cannot be exerted with greater impropriety than on this occasion; and it would be a kind of ingratitude in you to receive from her, reluctantly, one favour more. Besides, however nice and difficult you may be in this point, you must own it is more agreeable, and has a much better look, for a man to be

be indebted for his fortune to his wife than to a friend; as he becomes a protector of the one, and is protected by the other; and as nothing can be more true, than that a virtuous man cannot have a better friend than his wife.

If, after all, there remain in the bottom of your heart any repugnance to enter into new love-engagements, you cannot too speedily suppress them, both for your own honour and my repose: for I shall never be satisfied with either you or myself till you really become what you ought to be, and take pleasure in what your duty requires. Ought not I, my friend, to be less apprehensive of such a repugnance to new engagements, than of inclinations too relative to the old? what have I not done with regard to you, to discharge my duty? I have even exceeded my promises. Do I not even give you an Julia? will you not possess the better half of myself, and be still dearer to the other? With what pleasure shall I not indulge myself, after such a connection, in my attachment to you! yes, accomplish to her those vows you made to me, and let your heart fulfil with her all our former engagements. May it, if possible, give to her's all it owes to mine. O St Preux! to her I transfer that ancient debt. Remember it is not easily to be discharged.

Such, my friend, is the scheme I have projected to reunite you to us without danger; in giving you the same place in our family which you already hold in our hearts, attached by the most dear and sacred connections, we shall live together, sisters and brothers; you no longer your own enemy, nor ours. The warmest sen-

timents, when legitimate, are not dangerous. When we are no longer under the necessity of suppressing them, they cannot excite our apprehensions. So far indeed from endeavouring to suppress sentiments so innocent and delightful, we should make them at once both our pleasure and our duty. We should then love each other with the purest affection, and should enjoy the united charms of friendship, love, and innocence. And, if in executing the charge you have taken upon yourself, heaven should recompense the care you take of our children, by blessing you with children of your own, you will then know from experience how to estimate the service you have done us. Endowed with the greatest blessings of which human nature is capable, you will learn to support with pleasure the agreeable burden of a life useful to your friends and relations; you will, in short, perceive to be true what the vain philosophy of the vicious could never believe; that happiness is even in this world the reward of the virtuous.

Reflect at leisure on my proposal; not however to determine whether it suits you; I require not your answer on that point; but whether it is proper for Mrs Orbe, and whether you can make her as happy as she ought to make you. You know in what manner she has discharged her duty in every station of her sex. Judge by what she is, what she has a right to expect. She is as capable of love as Julia, and should be loved in the same degree. If you think you can deserve her, speak; my friendship will try to effect such an union, and, from
her's,

her's, flatters itself with success. But, if my hopes are deceived in you, you are at least a man of honour and probity, and are not unacquainted with her delicacy; you would not covet happiness at the expence of her felicity: let your heart be worthy of her, or never let it be offered.

Once more, I say, consult your own heart; consider well of your answer before you send it. In matters relative to the happiness of one's whole life, common prudence will not permit us to determine without great deliberation; but, in an affair where our whole soul, our happiness both here and hereafter, is at stake, even to deliberate lightly would be a crime. Call to your aid, therefore, my good friend, all the dictates of true wisdom; nor will I be ashamed to put you in mind of those which are most essential. You do not want religion: I am afraid, however, you do not draw from it all the advantage which your conduct might receive from its precepts, but that your philosophical pride elevates you above true Christian simplicity. In particular, your notions of prayer are by no means consistent with mine. In your opinion, that act of humiliation is of no use to us. God having implanted in every man's conscience all that is necessary to direct him aright, has afterwards left him to himself, a free agent, to act as he pleases. But you well know this is not the doctrine of St Paul, nor that which is professed in our church. We are free agents, it is true; but we are by nature ignorant, weak, and prone to evil: of whom then shall we acquire strength and knowledge, but of the Source of all power

and wisdom? and how shall we obtain them, if we are not humble enough to ask? Take care, my friend, that to the sublime ideas you entertain of the supreme Being, human pride doth not annex the abject notions, which belong only to man. Can you think the Deity wants such arts as are necessary to human understanding, or that he lies under the necessity of generalising his ideas to comprehend them the more readily? According to your notions of things, Providence would be under an embarrassment to take care of individuals. You seem to be afraid that a constant attention to a diversity of objects must perplex and fatigue Infinite Wisdom, and to think that it can act better by general than particular laws; doubtless, because this seems easier for the Almighty. The Deity is highly obliged to such great philosophers for furnishing him with convenient means of action, to ease him of his labour.

But why should we ask any thing of him? say you: is he not acquainted with our wants? is he not a Father that provides for his children? do we know better than he what is needful for us, or are we more desirous of happiness than he is that we should be happy? This, my dear St Preux, is all sophistry. The greatest of our wants, even the only one we have no remedy for, is that of being insensible of them; and the first step to relief, is the knowledge of our necessities. To be wise, we must be humble; in the sensibility of our weakness we become strong. Thus justice is united to clemency; thus grace and liberty triumph together. Slaves by our weakness, we are set free by prayer: for it depends

pend on us to seek and obtain favour; but the power to do this, depends not on ourselves.

Learn then not always to depend on your own sagacity on difficult occasions; but on that Being whose omnipotence is equal to his wisdom, and who knows how to direct us in every thing right. The greatest defect in human wisdom, even in that which has only virtue for its object, is a too great confidence, which makes us judge by the present of the future, and of our whole lives from the experience of a single moment. We perceive ourselves resolute one instant, and therefore conclude we shall always be so. Puffed up with that pride, which is nevertheless mortified by daily experience, we think we are under no danger of falling into a snare which we have once escaped. The modest language of true fortitude is, *I had resolution, it is true, on this or that occasion*: but he who boasts of his present security knows not how weak he may prove on the next trial; and, relying on his borrowed strength as if it were his own, deserves to feel the want of it when he stands in most need of assistance.

How vain are all our projects, how absurd our reasonings, in the eyes of that Being, who is not confined to time or space! Man is so weak, as to disregard things which are placed at a distance from him: he sees only the objects which immediately surround him; changes his notions of things as the point of sight is changed from whence he views them. We judge of the future from what agrees with us now, without knowing how far that which pleases to-day may be disagreeable to-morrow: we depend on our-

selves, as if we were always the same, and yet are changing every hour. Who can tell if they shall always desire what they now wish for? if they shall be to-morrow what they are to-day, if external objects, and even a change in the constitution of the body, may not vary the modification of their minds, and if we may not be made miserable by the very means we have concerted for our happiness! Shew me the fixed and certain rule of human wisdom, and I will take it for my guide. But if the best lesson it can teach us is, to distrust our own strength, let us have recourse to that superior wisdom which cannot deceive us, and follow those dictates which cannot lead us astray. It is that wisdom I implore to enlighten my understanding to advise you; do you implore the same to direct your resolutions? Whatever these be, I well know you will take no step which does not at present appear honourable and just: but this is not enough, it is necessary you should take such as will be always so; and of the means to do this neither you nor I are of ourselves competent judges.

LETTER CLVII.

ANSWER.

IS it possible! A letter from Julia!—after seven years silence!—Yes, it is her writing; I see, I feel it: can my eyes be a stranger to characters which my heart can never forget? What! and do you still remember my name?
do

do you still know how to write it? does not your hand tremble as your pen forms the letters? Alas! Julia! whither have you hurried my wandering thoughts? the form, the fold, the seal, the superscription of your letter call to my mind those very different epistles which love used to dictate. In this the heart and hand seem to be in opposition to each other. Ought the same hand-writing to be employed in conveying sentiments so very different?

Perhaps you will imagine that my thinking so much of your former letters too evidently justifies the suggestions of your last. But you are mistaken. I plainly perceive that I am changed, and that you are no longer the same; and what proves it to me the most is, that except your beauty and goodness, every thing I see in you now is a new subject of admiration. This remark may anticipate your assurance. I rely not on my own strength, but on the sentiment which makes it unnecessary. Inspired with every thing which I ought to honour in her whom I have ceased to adore, I know into what degree of respect my former homage ought to be converted. Penetrated with the most lively gratitude, it is true, I love you as much as ever; but I esteem and honour you most for the recovery of my reason.

Ever since the discerning and judicious Wolmar has discovered my real sentiments, I have acquired a better knowledge of myself, and am less alarmed at my weakness. Let it deceive my imagination as it will, the delusion will be still agreeable; it is sufficient that it can no longer

er offend you, and that my ideal errors serve in the end to preserve me from real danger.

O Julia! there are impressions, which neither time, circumstance, nor reason can efface. The wound may heal, but the scar will remain, an honourable mark that preserves the heart from any other wound. Love and inconstancy are incompatible; when a lover is fickle, he ceases to be a lover. For my part, I am no longer a lover; but, in ceasing to adore you as such, I remain under your protection. I am no longer apprehensive of danger from you, but then you prevent my apprehensions from others. No, respectable Julia, you shall never see in me any other than a friend to your person and a lover only of your virtues: but our love, our first, our matchless love, shall never be rooted out of my heart. The remembrance of the flower of my age shall never be thus tarnished: for, were I to live whole centuries, those happy hours of my youth will never return, nor be banished from my memory. We may, it is true, be no longer the same; but I shall never forget what we have been.—But let us come now to your cousin.

I cannot help confessing, my dear friend, that since I have no longer dared to contemplate your charms, I have become more sensible to her's. What eyes could be perpetually straying from beauty to beauty without fixing their admiration on either! mine have lately gazed on her's perhaps with too much pleasure; and I must own, that her charms, before imprinted on my heart, have during my absence made a deeper impression. The sanctuary of my heart is shut up;
but

but her image is in the temple. I gradually become to her what I might have been at first, had I never beheld you; and it was in your power only to make me sensible of the difference between what I feel for her and the love I had for you. My senses, released from that terrible passion, embrace the delightful sentiments of friendship. But must love be the result of this union? Ah, Julia! what difference! where is the enthusiasm? the adoration? where are those divine transports, those distractions, a hundred times more sublime, more delightful, more forcible than reason itself? a slight warmth, a momentary delirium, seize me, affect me a while, and then vanish. In your cousin and me I see two friends who have a tender regard for each other, and confess it. But have lovers a *regard* for each other? No, *you* and *I* are two words prohibited in the lover's language. Two lovers are not two persons, but one.

Is my heart then really at ease? How can it be so? She is charming, she is both your friend and mine: I am attached to her by gratitude, and think of her in the most delightful moments of reflection. How many obligations are hence conferred on a susceptible mind, and how is it possible to separate the tenderest sentiments from those to which she has such an undoubted right! Alas! it is decreed, that, between you and her, my heart will never enjoy one peaceful moment!

O women, women! dear and fatal objects! whom nature has made beautiful for our torment, who punish us when we brave your power, who pursue when we dread your charms; whose love and hate are equally destructive;
and

and whom we can neither approach nor fly with impunity! Beauty, charm, sympathy! inconceivable being, or chimera! source of pain and pleasure! beauty, more terrible to mortals than the element to which the birth of your goddess is ascribed! it is thou who dost create those tempests which are so destructive to mankind. How dearly, Julia! how dearly, Clara! do I purchase your cruel friendship!

I have lived in a tempest, and it is you who have always raised it: but how different are the agitations which you separately excite! different as the waves of the lake of Geneva from those of the Atlantic ocean. The first are short and quick, and by their constant agitation are often fatal to the small barks that ride without making way on their surface: but on the ocean, calm and mild in appearance, we find ourselves mounted aloft, and softly borne forward to a vast distance on waves, whose motions are slow and almost imperceptible. We think we scarce move from the place, and arrive at the farthest parts of the globe.

Such is, in fact, the difference between the effects which your charms and her's have on my heart. That first unequalled passion, which determined the destiny of my life, and which nothing could conquer but itself, had its birth before I was sensible of its generation; it hurried me on before I knew where I was, and involved me in irrevocable ruin before I believed myself led astray. While the wind was fair, my labouring bark was every moment alternately soaring into the clouds, and plunging into the deep: but I am now becalmed, and know no longer
where

where I am. On the contrary, I see, I feel too well how much her presence affects me, and conceive my danger greater than it really is. I experience some slight raptures, which are no sooner felt than gone. I am one moment transported with passion, and the next peaceful and calm: in vain is the vessel beaten about by the waves, while there is no wind to fill its sails: my heart, contented with her real charms, does not exaggerate them: she appears more beautiful to my eyes than to my imagination; and I am more afraid of her when present than absent. Your charms have, on the contrary, had always a very different effect; but at Clarens I alternately experience both.

Since I left it, indeed, the image of our cousin presents itself sometimes more powerfully to my imagination. Unhappily, however, it never appears alone: it affects me not with love, but with disquietude.

These are in reality my sentiments with regard both to the one and the other. All the rest of your sex are nothing to me; the pangs I have so long suffered have banished them entirely from my remembrance;

E fornito 'l mio tempo a mezzo gli anni.

My days elaps'd ere half my years are gone.

Adversity has supplied the place of fortitude, to enable me to conquer nature and triumph over temptation. People in distress have few desires, you have taught me to vanquish by resisting them. An unhappy passion is an instrument of wisdom. My heart is become, if I may so express

press myself, the organ of all my wants ; for when that is at ease, I want nothing. Let not you or your cousin disturb its tranquillity, and it will for the future be always at rest.

In this situation, what have I to fear from myself ? and by what cruel precaution would you rob me of happiness, in order to prevent my being exposed to lose it ? How capricious is it to have made me fight and conquer, to rob me afterwards of the reward of my victory ? Do you not condemn those who brave unnecessary danger ? why then did you recall me at so great a hazard, to run so many risks ? or why would you banish me when I am so worthy to remain ? Ought you to have permitted your husband to take the trouble he has done for nothing ? Why did you not prevent his taking the pains which you were determined to render fruitless ? Why did you not say to him, *Leave the poor wretch at the other end of the world, or I shall certainly transport him again ?* Alas ! the more afraid you are of me, the sooner you ought to recall me home. It is not in your presence I am in danger, but in your absence ; and I dread the power of your charms only where you are not. When the formidable Julia pursues me, I fly for refuge to Mrs Wolmar, and I am secure : whither shall I fly, if you deprive me of that asylum ? All times and places are dangerous while she is absent ; for in every place I find either Clara or Julia. In reflecting on the time past, in meditating on the present, the one and the other alternately agitate my heart ; and thus my restless imagination becomes tranquil only in your presence, and it is with you only I find
secu-

security against myself. How shall I explain to you the change I perceive in approaching you? You have always exerted the same sovereign power; but its effects are now different from what they were: in suppressing the transports you once inspired, your empire is more noble and sublime; a peaceful serenity has succeeded to the storm of the passions; my heart, modelled by yours, loves in the same manner, and becomes tranquil by your example. But in this transitory repose I enjoy only a short truce with the passions; and, tho' I am exalted to the perfection of angels in your presence, I no sooner forsake you than I fall into my native meanness. Yes, Julia, I am apt sometimes to think I have two souls, and that the good one is deposited in your hands. Ah! why do you seek to separate me from it?

But you are fearful of the consequences of youthful desires, extinguished only by trouble and adversity. You are afraid for the young women who are in your house and under your protection. You are afraid of that which the prudent Wolmar was not afraid of. How mortifying to me are such apprehensions! do you then esteem your friend less than the meanest of your servants? I can, however, forgive your thinking ill of me; but never your not paying yourself that respect which is so justly your due. No, Julia, the flame with which I once burnt has purified my heart; and I am no longer actuated like other men. After what I have been, should I so debase myself tho' but for a moment, I would hide myself in the remotest corner of

the earth, and should never think myself too far removed from Julia.

What ! could I disturb that peaceful order and domestic tranquillity, in which I take so much pleasure ? could I fully that sweet retreat of innocence and peace, wherein I have dwelt with so much honour ? could I be so base as——No, the most debauched, the most abandoned, of men would be affected with so charming a picture. He could not fail of being enamoured with virtue in this asylum. So far from carrying hither his licentious manners, he would betake himself thither to cast them off. Could I then, Julia, be capable of what you insinuate ? and that under your own eyes ? no, my dear friend, open your doors to me without scruple ; your mansion is to me the temple of virtue ; its sacred image strikes me in every part of it, and binds me to its service. I am not indeed an angel ; but I shall dwell in the habitation of angels, and will imitate their example. Those who would not wish to resemble them, will never seek their company.

You see it is with difficulty I come to the chief object of your last letter ; that which I should have first and most maturely considered, and which only should now engage my thoughts if I could pretend to the happiness proposed to me. O Julia, benevolent and incomparable friend ! in offering me thus your other half, the most valuable present in the universe next to yourself, you do more for me if possible than ever you have done before. A blind ungovernable passion might have prevailed on you to give me yourself ; but to give me your friend is the
fin-

sincereſt proof of your eſteem. From this moment I begin to think myſelf, indeed, a man of real merit, ſince I am thus diſtinguiſhed. But how cruel, at the ſame time, is this proof of it ! In accepting your offer, I ſhould bely my heart ; and to deſerve, muſt reſuſe it. You know me, and may judge.

It is not enough that your charming couſin ſhould engage my affections ; I know ſhe ſhould be loved as you are. But will it, can it be ? or does it depend on me to do her that juſtice, in this particular, which is her due ? Alas ! if you intended ever to unite me to her, why did you not leave me a heart to give her ; a heart which ſhe might have inſpired with new ſentiments, and which in turn might have offered her the firſt-fruits of love ! I ought to have a heart at eaſe and at liberty, ſuch as was that of the prudent and worthy Orbe, to love her only as he did. I ought to be as deſerving as he was, in order to ſucceed him : otherwiſe the compariſon between her former and preſent ſituation will only ſerve to render the latter leſs ſupportable ; the cold and divided love of a ſecond huſband, ſo far from conſoling her for the loſs of the firſt, will but make her regret him the more. By her union with me, ſhe will only convert a tender grateful friend into a common huſband. Will ſhe gain by ſuch an exchange ? ſhe will be doubly a loſer by it ; her ſuſceptible mind will ſeverely feel its loſs ; and how ſhall I ſupport a continual ſadneſs, of which I am the cauſe, and which I cannot remove ? In ſuch a ſituation, alas ! her grief would be firſt fatal to me. No, Julia, I can never be happy

at the expence of her ease. I love her too well to marry her.

Be happy! No, can I be happy without making her so? Can either of the parties be separately happy or miserable in marriage? are not their pleasures and pains, common to both? and does not the chagrin which one gives to the other always rebound on the person who caused it? I should be made miserable by her afflictions, without being made happy by her goodness. Beauty, fortune, merit, love, all might conspire to insure my felicity! but my heart, my froward heart, would counterwork them all; would poison the source of my delights, and make me miserable in the very midst of felicity.

In my present situation, I take pleasure in her company: but if I should attempt to augment that pleasure by a closer union, I shall deprive myself of the most agreeable moments of my life. Her turn for humour and gaiety may give an amorous cast to her friendship, but this is only whilst there are witnesses to her favours. I may also feel too lively an emotion for her; but it is only when by your presence you have banished every tender sentiment for Julia. When she and I are by ourselves, it is you only who render our conversation agreeable. The more our attachment increases, the more we think on the source from which it sprung; the ties of friendship are drawn closer, and we love each other but to talk of you. Hence arise a thousand pleasing reflections, pleasing to Clara, and more so to me, all which a closer union would infallibly destroy. Will not such reflections,
in

in that case too delightful, be a kind of infidelity to her? and with what face can I make a beloved and respectable wife the confident of those infidelities of which my heart, in spite of me, would be guilty? This heart could no longer transfuse itself into her's. No longer daring to talk of you, I should soon forbear to speak at all. Honour and duty imposing on me a new reserve, would thus estrange me from the wife of my bosom, and I should have no longer a guide or a counsellor to direct my steps or correct my errors. Is this the homage she has a right to expect from me? is this that tribute of gratitude and tenderness which I ought to pay to her? is it thus that I am to make her and myself happy!

Is it possible that Julia can have forgotten our mutual vows? for my part, I never can forget them. I have lost all, except my sincerity, and that I will preserve inviolate to my last hour. As I could not live for you, I will die unmarried. Nay, had I not already made such a promise to myself, I would do it now. For though it be a duty to marry, it is yet a more indispensable one not to make any person unhappy; and all the sentiments such a contract would now excite in me, would be mixed with the constant regret of that which I once vainly hoped for: a regret which would at once be my torment, and that of her who should be unfortunate enough to be my wife. I should require of her those days of bliss which I expected with you. How should I support the comparison! what woman in the world could bear that? Ah, no, I could never endure the thoughts of being at once deprived

of you, and destined to be the husband of another.

Seek not then, my dear friend, to shake those resolutions on which depends the repose of my life; seek not to recall me out of that state of annihilation into which I am fallen; lest, in bringing me back to a sense of my existence, my wounds should bleed afresh, and I should again sink under a load of misfortunes. Since my return, I perceived how deeply I became interested in whatever concerned your charming friend; but I was not alarmed at it, as I knew the situation of my heart would never permit me to be too solicitous. Indeed I was not displeased with an emotion, which, while it added softness to the attachment I always had for Clara, would assist in diverting my thoughts from a more dangerous object, and enable me to support your presence with greater confidence. This emotion has something in it of the pleasure of love, without any of its pains. The calm delight I take in seeing her is not disturbed by the restless desire of possessing her: contented to pass my whole life in the manner I passed the last winter, I find between you both that peaceful and agreeable situation *, which tempers the austerity of virtue, and renders its lessons amiable. If a vain transport affects me for a moment, every thing conspires to suppress it; and I have too effectually vanquished those infinitely
more

* This is a direct contradiction to what he asserted before. The poor philosopher seems to be in a droll dilemma between two pretty women. One might be apt to think he chose to make love to neither, that he might the better love them both.

more impetuous and dangerous emotions to fear any thing that can assail me now. I honour your friend no less than I love her, and that is saying every thing. But should I consult only my own interest, the rights of the tenderest friendship are too valuable, to risque their loss, by endeavouring to extend them: and I need not even think of the respect which is her due, to prevent my ever saying a single word in private conversation which would require interpretation, or which she ought not to understand. She may perhaps have sometimes remarked a little too much solicitude in my behaviour towards her; but she has surely never observed in my heart any desire to express it. Such as I was for six months past, such would I be with regard to her as long as I live. I know none who approach you, so perfect as she is; but were she even more perfect than yourself, I feel, that after having been your lover I should never have become her's.

Before I conclude this letter, I must give you my opinion of yours. Yes, Julia, with all your prudence and virtue, I can discover in it the scruples of a timorous mind, which thinks it a duty to frighten itself; and conceives its security lies in being afraid. This extreme timidity is as dangerous as excessive confidence. In constantly representing to us imaginary monsters, it wastes our strength by combating chimeras, and, by terrifying us without cause, makes us less on our guard against real dangers, as well as less capable of discerning them. Read over again, now and then, the letter which Lord B—— wrote to you last year, on the subject of your
huf-

husband; you will find in it some good advice that may be of service to you in many respects. I do not discommend your devotion; it is affecting, amiable, and like yourself; it is such as even your husband should be pleased with. But take care, lest timidity and precaution lead you to quietism; and lest by representing to yourself danger on every side, you are induced at length to confide in nothing. Do not you know, my dear friend, that a state of virtue is a state of warfare? Let us employ our thoughts less on the dangers which threaten us, than on ourselves; that we may always be prepared to withstand temptation. If to run in the way of temptation is to deserve to fall, to shun it with too much solicitude is often to fly from the opportunities of discharging the noblest duties; it is not good to be always thinking of temptations, even with a view to avoid them. I shall never seek temptation; but in whatever situation Providence may place me for the future, the eight months I passed at Clarens will be my security; nor shall I be afraid that any one will rob me of the prize you taught me to deserve. I shall never be weaker than I have been, nor shall ever have greater temptations to resist. I have felt the bitterness of remorse, and I have tasted the sweets of victory, after all which I need not hesitate a moment in making my choice; every circumstance of my past life, even my errors, being a security for my future behaviour.

I shall not pretend to enter with you into any new or profound disquisitions, concerning the order of the universe, and the government of those beings of which it is composed: it will be
suf-

sufficient for me to say, that in matters so far above human comprehension there is no other way of rightly judging of things invisible, but by induction from those which are visible; and that all analogy makes for those general laws which you seem to reject. The most rational ideas we can form of the Supreme Being confirm this opinion; for, although Omnipotence lies under no necessity of adopting methods to abridge his labour, it is nevertheless worthy of Supreme Wisdom to prefer the most simple modes of action, that there may be nothing useless either in cause or effect. In the formation of man, he endowed him with all the necessary faculties to accomplish what should be required of him; and when we ask of him the power to do good, we ask nothing of him but what he has already given us. He has given us understanding to know what is good, a heart to love *, and liberty to make choice of it. It is in these sublime gifts, therefore, that divine grace consists; and as we have all received it, we are all accountable for its effects.

I have heard, in my time, a good deal of argument against the free agency of man, and despise all its sophistry. A casuist may take what pains he will to prove that I am no free agent; my innate sense of freedom constantly destroys his arguments; for whatever choice I make after deliberation, I feel plainly that it depended

* St Preux supposes moral conscience to depend on sentiment, not on judgment; which is contrary to the opinion of the philosophers. I am apt to think however that he is in the right.

pended only on myself to have made the contrary. Indeed all the scholastic subtilties I have heard on this head are futile and frivolous; because they prove too much, are equally used to oppose truth and falsehood, and, whether man be a free agent or not, serve equally to prove one or the other. With these kind of reasoners, the Deity himself is not a free agent; and the word *liberty* is in fact a term of no meaning. They triumph, not in having solved the difficulty, but in having substituted a chimera in its room. They begin by supposing that every intelligent being is merely passive, and from that supposition deduce consequences to prove its inactivity: a very convenient method of argumentation truly! If they accuse their adversaries of reasoning in this manner, they do us injustice. We do not *suppose* ourselves free and active beings: we feel that we are so. It belongs to them to shew, not only that this sentiment may deceive us, but that it really does so *. The bishop of Cloyne has demonstrated, that, without any diversity in appearances, body or matter may have no absolute existence; but is this enough to induce us to affirm that it absolutely has no existence? In all this, the mere phenomenon would cost more trouble than the reality; and I will always hold by that which appears the most simple.

I do not believe, therefore, that after having provided in every shape for the wants of man in his formation, God interests himself in an extraor-

* This is not the matter in dispute. It is to know whether the will be determined without a cause, or what is the cause that determines the will.

traordinary manner for one person more than another. Those who abuse the common aids of Providence, are unworthy such assistance ; and those who make good use of them, have no occasion for any other. Such a partiality appears to me injurious to divine justice. You will say, this severe and discouraging doctrine may be deduced from the holy Scripture. Be it so. Is it not my first duty to honour my Creator ? In whatever veneration then I hold the sacred text, I hold its Author in a still greater ; and I could sooner be induced to believe the Bible corrupted or unintelligible, than that God can be malevolent or unjust. St Paul would not have the vessel say to the potter who formed it, Why hast thou formed me thus ? This is very well, if the potter should apply it only to such services as he constructed it to perform ; but if he should censure this vessel as being inadequate to the purpose for which it was constructed, has it not a right to ask, Why hast thou made me thus ?

But does it follow from hence that prayer is useless ? God forbid that I should deprive myself of that resource. Every act of the understanding which raises us to God, carries us above ourselves ; in imploring his assistance, we learn to experience it. It is not his immediate act that operates on us, it is we that improve ourselves by raising our thoughts in prayer to him. All that we ask aright, he bestows ; and, as you observe, we acquire strength in confessing our weakness. But if we abuse this ordinance, and turn mystics ; instead of raising ourselves to God, we are lost in our own wild imaginations ;
in

in seeking grace, we renounce reason; in order to obtain of heaven one blessing, we trample under foot another; and in obstinately persisting that heaven should enlighten our hearts, we extinguish the light of our understandings. But who are we that should insist on the Deity's performing miracles, when we please, in our favour?

You know very well, there is no good thing that may not be carried into a blameable excess; even devotion itself, when it degenerates into the madness of enthusiasm. Yours is too pure ever to arrive at this excess; but you have reason to be on your guard against a less degree of it. I have heard you often censure the ecstasies of the pietists *: but do you know from whence they arise? from allotting a longer time to prayer than is consistent with the weakness of human nature. Hence the spirits are exhausted, the imagination takes fire, they see visions, they become inspired and prophetic; nor is it then in the power of the understanding to stop the progress of fanaticism. Now, you shut yourself frequently in your closet, and are constant in prayer. You do not indeed as yet converse with pietists, but you read their books. Not that I ever censured your taste for the writings of the worthy Fenelon: but what have you to do with those of his disciple? You read
Mu-

* A sort of enthusiasts that take it into their heads to follow the gospel strictly according to the letter; in the manner of the methodists in England, the Moravians in Germany, and the Jansenists in France; excepting, however, that the latter want only to be masters, to be more severe and persecuting than their enemies.

Muralt. I indeed read him too; but I make choice of his Letters, you of his Divine Instinct. But remark his end, lament the extravagant errors of that sensible man, and think of yourself. At present a pious, a true Christian, beware of becoming a mere devotee.

I receive your counsel, my dear friend, with the docility of a child, and give you mine with the zeal of a father. Since virtue, instead of dissolving our attachments, has rendered them indissoluble, the same lessons may be of use to both, as the same interests connect us. Never shall our hearts speak to each other, never shall our eyes meet without presenting to both a respectable object which shall mutually elevate our sentiments, the perfections of the one reciprocally assisting the other.

But though our deliberations may be common to both, the conclusion is not; it is yours alone to decide. Cease not, then, you who have ever been mistress of my destiny, cease not to be so still. Weigh my arguments, and pronounce sentence: whatever you order me to do, I will submit to your direction, and will at least deserve the continuance of it. Should you think it improper for me to see you personally again, you will yet be always present to my mind, and preside over my actions. Should you deprive me of the honour of educating your offspring, you will not deprive me of the virtues which you have inspired. These are the offspring of your mind, which mine adopts as its own, and will never bear to have them torn from it.

Speak to me, Julia, freely. And as I have
VOL. III. I F f now

now been explicit as to what I think and feel on this occasion, tell me what I must do. You know how far my destiny is connected with that of my illustrious friend. I have not consulted him on this occasion; I have neither shewn him this letter nor yours. If he should know that you disapprove his project, or rather that of your husband, he will reject it himself; and I am far from designing to deduce from thence any objection to your scruples; he only ought to be ignorant of them till you have finally determined. In the mean time, I shall find some means or other to delay our departure, in which, though they may surprise him a little, I know he will acquiesce. For my own part, I had rather never see you more, than to see you only just to bid you again adieu: and to live with you as a stranger, would be a state of mortification which I have not deserved.

L E T T E R CLVIII.

From Mrs WOLMAR.

STRANGE! how your head-strong imagination affrights and bewilders itself! and at what, pray? truly at the sincerest proofs of my friendship and esteem which you ever experienced; at the peaceful reflections which my solicitude for your real happiness inspired; at the most obliging, the most advantageous, and the most honourable proposal that was ever made you; at my desire, perhaps an indiscreet one, of uniting you by indissoluble ties to our family; at the desire
of

of making a relation, a kinsman of an ingrate, who affects to believe I want to discard him as a friend. To remove your present uneasiness, you need only take what I write in the most natural sense the words will bear. But you have long delighted in tormenting yourself with false constructions. Your letters are like your life, sublime and mean, masterly and puerile. Ah, my dear philosopher! will you never cease to be a child.

Where, pray, have you learned that I intended to impose on you new laws, to break with you, and send you back to the farthest part of the world? Do you really find this to be the tenour of my letter? In anticipating the pleasure of living with you, I was fearful of those inconveniences which I conceived might possibly arise; therefore endeavoured to remove them, by making your fortune more equal to your merit and the regard I had for you. This is my whole crime; is there any thing in it at which you have reason to be alarmed?

Indeed, my friend, you are in the wrong: for you are not ignorant how dear you are to me, and how easy it is for you to obtain your wish without seeking occasion to torment others or yourself.

Be assured then, that if your residence here is agreeable to you, it will be equally so to me; and that nothing Mr Wolmar has done for me gives me greater satisfaction than the care he has taken to establish you in this house. I agree to it with pleasure, and know we shall be useful to each other. More ready to listen to good advice than to suggest it to ourselves, we

have both occasion for a guide : and who can be more sensible of the danger of going astray than he whose return has cost him so dear? what object can better represent that danger? After having broken through such connections as once subsisted between us, the remembrance of them should influence us to do nothing unworthy of the virtuous motives which induced us to break them. Yes, I shall always think myself obliged to make you the witness of every action of my life, and to communicate to you every sentiment with which my heart is inspired. Ah! my friend! I may be weak before the rest of the world, but I can answer for myself in your company.

It is in this delicacy, which always survives true love, and not in Mr Wolmar's subtle distinctions, that we are to look for the cause of that elevation of soul and that innate fortitude we experience. Such an explication is at least more natural, and does more honour to our hearts than his, and has a greater tendency to encourage us to virtue, which alone is sufficient to give it the preference. Hence you may be assured, that, so far am I from being in such a whimsical disposition as you imagine, that I am just the reverse. In so much that, if the project of your returning to reside here must be given up, I shall esteem such an event as a great misfortune to you, to me, to my children, and even to my husband; on whose account alone you know I have many reasons for desiring your presence. But to speak only of my own particular inclination : You remember your first arrival. Did I shew less pleasure at seeing you,
than

than you felt in seeing me? has it ever appeared to you that your stay at Clarens gave me the least trouble or uneasiness? did you think I betrayed the least pleasure at your departure? must I go farther, and speak to you with my usual freedom; I will frankly confess to you then, that the six last months we passed together were the happiest of my life, and that in that short space of time I tasted all the happiness of which my sensibility has furnished me the idea.

Never shall I forget one day, in particular, of the past winter, when, after having been reading the journal of your voyages and that of your friend's adventures, we supped in the Apollo. It was then that, reflecting on the felicity with which Providence had blessed me in this world, I looked round and saw all my friends about me; my father, my husband, my children, my cousin, Lord B——, and you, without counting Fanny, who did not cast the least blemish on the scene. This little saloon, said I to myself, contains all that is dear to my heart, and perhaps all that is desirable in this world. I am here surrounded by every thing that interests me. The whole universe to me is in this little spot. I enjoy at once the regard I have for my friends, that which they have for me, and that which they have for each other: their mutual good-will either comes from or relates to me: I see nothing but what seems to extend my being, and nothing to divide it. I exist in a manner in all those who are about me; my imagination can extend no farther: I have nothing more to desire: to reflect and to be happy is with me the same thing: I live at once in all that I love: I

am replete with happiness, and satisfied with life: come, death, when thou wilt ! I no longer dread thy power : the measure of my life is full, and I have nothing new to experience worth enjoyment.

The greater pleasure I enjoyed in your company, the more agreeable is it to me to reflect on it, and the more disquietude also hath every thing given me that might disturb it. We will for a moment lay aside that timid morality and pretended devotion, with which you reproach me. You must confess at least that the social pleasures we tasted sprung from that openness of heart, by which every thought, every sentiment, of the one was communicated to the other, and from which every one, conscious of being what he ought, appeared such as he really was. Let us suppose now any secret intrigue, any connection necessary to be concealed, any motive of reserve and secrecy intruding on our harmony ; that moment the reciprocal pleasure we felt in seeing each other would vanish. Shyness and restraint would ensue ; we should no sooner meet together than we should wish to part ; and at length circumspection and decorum would bring on distrust and distaste. It is impossible long to love those of whom we are afraid or suspicious. They soon become troublesome——Julia troublesome ! —troublesome to her friend ! no, no, that cannot be ; there can be no evils in nature, but such as it is possible to support.

In thus freely telling you my scruples, I do not pretend, however, to make you change your resolutions ; but to induce you to reconsider the motives on which they are founded ;
lest,

left, in taking a step, all the consequences of which you may not foresee, you might have reason to repent at a time when you will not dare to retract it. As to Mr Wolmar's having no fears, it was not his place to fear, but yours. No one is so proper a judge of what is to be feared of you, as yourself. Consider the matter well then; and, if nothing is in reality to be feared, tell me so, and I shall think of it no more: for I know your sincerity, and never can distrust your intentions. Your heart may be capable of an accidental error; but can never be guilty of a premeditated crime, and this it is that makes the distinction between a weak man and a wicked one.

Besides, though my objections had really more weight than I am inclined to think they have, why must things be viewed in their most disadvantageous light? Surely there can be no necessity for such extreme precautionary measures. It cannot be requisite that you should break through all your projects, and fly from us for ever. Though young in years, you are possessed of all the experience of age. The tranquillity of mind which succeeds the noble passion, is a sensation which increases by fruition. A susceptible heart may dread a state of repose, to which it has been unaccustomed; but a little time is sufficient to reconcile us to our peaceful situation, and in a little time more we give it the preference. For my part, I foresee the hour of your security to be nearer than you yourself imagine. Extremes, you know, never last long; you have loved too much not to become in time indifferent: the cinder which is cast from the furnace
can

can never be lighted again; but before it becomes such, the coal must be totally burnt out. Be vigilant but for a few years more, and you will then have nothing to fear.

Your acceptance of my proposal would at once have removed all danger; but, independent of that view, such an attachment has charms enough to be desired for its own sake; and if your delicacy prevents you from closing with my proposals, I have no need to be informed how much such a restraint must cost you. At the same time, however, I am afraid that the pretexts which impose on your reason, are many of them frivolous: I am afraid, that in piquing yourself on the fulfilling of engagements which no longer exist, you only make a false shew of virtue, in a constancy for which you are by no means to be commended, and which is at present entirely misplaced. I have already told you, that I think the observance of a rash and criminal vow is an additional crime. If yours were not so at first, it is become so now; and that is sufficient to annul it. The promise which no man ought to break, is that of being always a man of virtue, and resolute in the discharge of his duty; to change when that is changed, is not levity, but constancy. Act at all times as virtue requires you to do, and you will never break your word.

If, however, there be among your scruples any solid objection, we will examine it at leisure. In the mean time, I am not very sorry that you did not embrace my scheme with the same avidity as I formed it; that my blunder, if it be one, may give you less pain. I had meditated
this

this project during the absence of my cousin; with whom I have since had some general conversation on the subject of a second marriage, and find her so averse to it, that, in spite of the regard which I know she has for you, I am afraid I must exert a greater authority than becomes me to overcome her reluctance, for this is a point in which friendship ought to respect the bent of the inclinations.

I will own, nevertheless, that I still abide by my design: it would be so agreeable to us all, would so honourably extricate you from your present precarious situation in life, would so unite all our interests, and make so natural an obligation of that friendship which is so delightful to all, that I cannot think of giving it up entirely. No, my friend, you can never be too nearly allied to me; it is not even enough that you might be my cousin, I could wish you were my brother.

Whatever may be the consequence of these notions, do more justice to my sentiments for you. Make use, without reserve, of my friendship, my confidence, and my esteem. Remember I shall not prescribe any rules to you; nor do I think I have any reason to do it. Deny me not however the privilege of giving you advice, but imagine not I lay you under any commands. If you think you can securely reside at Clarens, come hither, stay here; you cannot give me greater pleasure: but, if you think a few years longer absence necessary to cure the suspicious remains of impetuous youth, write to me often in your absence, come and see us as often as you will,

will, and let us cultivate a correspondence founded on the most cordial intimacy.

What pains will not such consolation alleviate? what absence will not be supportable under the pleasing hope of at last ending our days together! I will do yet more; I am ready to put one of my children under your care; I shall think him safer in your hands than my own; and, when you bring him back, I know not which of you will give me the greater pleasure by your return. On the other hand, if you become entirely reasonable, banish your chimerical notions, and are willing to deserve my cousin, come, pay her your best respects, and make her happy. Come then, and surmount every obstacle that opposes your success, and make a conquest of her heart: such assistance as my friendship can give, shall not on my part be wanting. Come, and make each other happy, and nothing more will be wanting to render me completely so. But, whatever resolution you take, after having maturely considered the matter, speak confidently, and affront your friend no more by your groundless suspicions.

Let me not however, in thinking so much of you, forget myself. My turn to be heard must come at last: for you act with your friends in a dispute, as with your adversaries at chess; you defend yourself, by attacking them. You excuse your being a philosopher, by accusing me of being a devotee. I am then, in your opinion a devotee, or ready to become one. Be it so; contemptible denominations never change the nature of things. If devotion is commendable, why am I to blame in being devout? But,
perhaps

perhaps that epithet is too low for you. The dignity of the philosopher disdains the worship of the vulgar: it would serve God in a more sublime manner, and raise even to heaven itself its pretensions and its pride. Poor philosophers! — But to return to myself.

I have, from my childhood, respected virtue, and have always cultivated my reason. I endeavoured to regulate my conduct by human understanding and sentiment, and have been ill conducted. Before you deprive me of the guide I have chosen, give me another on which I may depend. I thought myself as wise as other people, and yet a thousand others have lived more prudently than I; they must therefore have had resources which I had not. Why is it that I, knowing myself well born, have had reason to conceal my life and conversation from the world? why did I hate the sin which I committed even in spite of myself? I thought I knew my own strength; I relied on it, and was deceived. All the resistance which was in my own power, I think, I made; and yet I fell.—How must those have done who have escaped? they must have had a better support.

From their example I was induced to seek the same support, and have found in it a peculiar advantage which I did not expect. During the reign of the passions, they themselves contribute to the continuance of the anxieties they at first occasion; they retain hope always by the side of desire, and hence we are enabled to support the absence of felicity: if our expectations are disappointed, hope supplies its place; and the agreeable delusion lasts as long as the passion
which

which gave it birth. Thus, in a situation of this kind, passion supports itself, and the very solicitude it causes is a chimerical pleasure which is substituted for real enjoyment. Nay more, those who have no desires must be very unhappy; they are deprived, if I may be allowed the expression, of all they possess. We enjoy less that which we obtain than that which we hope for, and are seldom happy but in expectation. In fact, man, made to desire every thing and obtain little, of boundless avarice, yet narrow capacity, has received of heaven a consolatory aid, which brings to him in idea every thing he desires, displays it to his imagination, represents it to his view, and in one sense makes it his own; but to render such imaginary property still more flattering and agreeable, it is even modified to his passion. But this shadow vanishes the moment the real object appears; the imagination can no longer magnify that which we actually possess; the charms of illusion cease, where those of enjoyment begin. The world of fancy, therefore, the land of chimeras, is the only world worthy to be inhabited; and such is the inanity of human enjoyments, that, except that Being who is self-existent, there is nothing delightful but that which has no existence at all.

If this effect does not always follow in the particular objects of our passions, it is infallible in the common sentiment which includes the whole. To live without pain is incompatible with our state of mortality: it would be in fact to die. He who has every thing in his power, if a creature, must be miserable, as he would
be

be deprived of the pleasure of desiring; than which every other want would be more supportable *.

This is indeed what I have in part experienced since my marriage and your return. Every thing around me gives me cause of content, and yet I am not contented. A secret languor steals into the bottom of my heart: I find it puffed up and void, as you formerly said was the case with yours; all my attachments are not sufficient to fill it. This disquietude, I confess, is strange: but it is nevertheless true. O my friend! I am indeed too happy: my happiness is a burden to me.

Can you think of a remedy for this disgust? For my part, I must own, that a sentiment so unreasonable and so involuntary, has in a great measure diminished the value of life, and I cannot imagine what blessings it can bestow which I want, or with which I should be satisfied. Can any woman be more susceptible than I am? Can she love her father, her husband, her children, her friends, her relations better than I do? Can she be more generally beloved? can she lead a life more agreeable to her taste? or can she be more at liberty to exchange it for any other? Can she enjoy better health? Can she have more expedients to divert her, or stronger ties to bind her to the world? and yet, notwith-

VOL. III. I G g stand-

* Hence it is that every sovereign who aspires to be despotic, aspires to the honour of being miserable. In every kingdom in the world, would you see the man who is the most unhappy of all his countrymen, go directly to the sovereign, particularly if he be an absolute monarch.

standing all this, I am constantly uneasy; my heart sighs after something of which it is entirely ignorant.

Therefore, finding nothing in this globe capable of giving it satisfaction, my desiring soul seeks an object in another world; in elevating itself to the source of sentiment and existence, its languor vanishes; it is re-animated, it acquires new strength and new life. It thence obtains a new existence, independent of corporeal passions; or rather, it exists no longer in me, but in the immensity of the Supreme Being; and, disencumbered for a while from its terrestrial shackles, returns to them again with patience, consoled with the expectation of futurity.

You smile at all this, my good friend; I understand you. I have indeed pronounced my own condemnation, having formerly censured the heart which I now approve. To this I have only one word to answer; and that is, I then spoke without experience. I do not pretend to justify it in every shape. I do not pretend to say, this visionary taste is prudent; I only say, it is a delightful supplement to that sense of happiness which in other things exhausts itself by enjoyment. If it be productive of evil, doubtless it ought to be rejected; if it deceives the heart by false pleasure, it ought also on that account to be rejected. But after all, which has the greater incentive to virtue, the philosopher with his sublime maxims, or the Christian with his humble simplicity? Who is most happy even in this world, the sage with his profound understanding, or the enthusiast with his rap-
ture

ture of devotion? What business have I to think or imagine, when my faculties are all in a manner alienated? Will you say intoxication has its pleasure? be it so, and be mine esteemed such if you will. Either leave me in this agreeable delirium, or shew me a situation more delightful.

I have condemned indeed the ecstasies of the mystics; and condemn them still, when they serve to detach us from our duty; and, by raising in us a disgust against an active life by the charms of contemplation, seduce us into that state of quietism which you imagine me so near, and from which I believe myself nevertheless to be as far distant as you. I know very well, that to serve God is not to pass our lives on our knees in prayer; that it is to discharge on earth those obligations which our duty requires; it is to do, with a view to please him, every thing which the situation in which he hath placed us demands,

Il cor gradisce;

E serve a lui chi 'l suo dover compisce.

To have a heart that glows with pure desire,
To love and serve where duty may require.,

We ought first to perform the duties of our station, and then pray when we have time. This is the rule I have endeavoured to follow: I do not make that self-examination, with which you reproach me, a task, but a recreation: I do not see why, among the pleasures that are within my reach, I should be forbidden the most affecting and the most innocent of all.

I have examined myself with more severity, since the receipt of your letter. I have inquired into the effects which the pious inclination, that so much displeases you, produces in my mind ; and I can safely say, I see nothing that should give me reason to fear, at least so soon as you imagine, the evils of excessive and superfluous devotion.

In the first place, I have not so fervent a longing after this exercise as to give me pain when I am deprived of an opportunity, nor am I out of humour at every avocation from it. It never interrupts my thoughts in the business of the day, nor gives me any disgust or impatience in the discharge of my duty. If retirement be sometimes necessary, it is when I have felt some disagreeable emotion, and am better in my closet than elsewhere. It is there, that, entering into the examination of myself, I recover my temper and ease. If any care troubles me, if any pain affects me, it is there I go and lay them down. Every pain, every trouble vanishes before a greater object. In reflecting on all the bounties of Providence towards me, I am ashamed to be sensible of such trifling ills, and to forget its greater mercies. I require neither frequent nor long intervals of solitude. When I am affected by involuntary sadness, the shedding a few tears before Him who is the comforter of hearts, relieves mine in an instant. My reflections are never bitter nor grievous ; even my repentance is free from dread : my errors give me less cause of fear than of shame ; I regret that I have committed them, but I feel no remorse, nor dread of their effects. The God I
serve

serve is a merciful Being; a Father, whose goodness only affects me, and surpasses all his other attributes. His power astonishes me; his immensity confounds my ideas; his justice — but he has made man weak; and though he be just, he is merciful. An avenging God is the God of the wicked. I can neither fear him on my own account, nor pray for his vengeance to be exerted against any other. It is the God of peace, the God of goodness, whom I adore. I know, I feel, I am the work of his hands, and trust to see him, at the last day, such as he has manifested himself to my heart during my life.

It is impossible for me to tell you how many pleasing ideas arise hence, to render my days agreeable, and give joy to my heart. In leaving my closet in such a disposition, I feel myself more light and gay. Every care vanishes, every embarrassment is removed; nothing rough or disagreeable appears, but all is smooth and flowing: every thing wears a pleasant countenance; it costs me no pains to be in good humour; I love those better whom I loved before, and am still more agreeable to them: even my husband is more pleased with the disposition which is the effect of such rational devotion. Devotion, he says, is the opium of the soul. When taken in small quantities, it enlivens, it animates, it supports it: a stronger dose lulls it to sleep, enrages, or destroys it. I hope I shall never proceed to such extremes.

You see I am not so much offended at the title of devotee, as perhaps you expected; but then I do not value it at the rate you imagine: yet I would not have the term *devotion* applied

to any affected external deportment, and to a sort of employment which dispenses with every other. Thus, that Mrs Guyon you mention, had in my opinion done better to have carefully discharged her duty as mistress of her family, to have educated her children in the Christian faith, and to have governed her servants prudently, than to have composed books of devotion, disputed with bishops, and at last be imprisoned in the Bastile for her unintelligible reveries.

As little do I approve of that mystical and metaphorical language, which feeds the heart with chimeras, and in the place of spiritual love, substitutes sentiments too nearly allied to carnal affections, and too apt to excite them. The more susceptible the heart, or lively the imagination, the more we ought to be on our guard against those images by which they may be affected: for how can we see the relations of the mystical object, if we do not at the same time see the sensual; and how can a modest woman have the assurance to contemplate those objects in her imagination, which she would blush to look on.

But what sets me most against these devotees by profession, is that affectation of manners which renders them insensible to humanity; that excessive pride which makes them look down with pity on the rest of mankind. If ever they condescend to stoop from their imaginary elevation to do an act of charity, it is always done in a manner extremely mortifying to the object: their pity is so cruel and insulting, their justice is so rigid, their charity so severe, their zeal so bitter, their contempt so much like hatred, that even the insensibility of the rest of the
world

world is less cruel than their pity. Their love for heaven serves them as an excuse for loving nobody on earth; they have even no affection for one another; nor is there an instance of sincere friendship to be found among people of extreme devotion. The more detached they affect to be from the world, the more they expect from it; and one would think their devotion to God is exerted only that they may have a pretext to exercise his authority over the rest of his creatures.

I have such an aversion for all abuses of this kind as should naturally be my security: if nevertheless I am doomed to fall, it will not be voluntarily, and I hope, from the friendship of those who are about me, that it will not be without warning. I must own, I now think that it was possible for my former inquietude concerning my husband, to have effected such a change. Happily, the prudent letter of my Lord B——, to which you very reasonably refer me, together with his sensible and consolatory conversation, as well as yours, have entirely dissipated my fears and changed my principles. I now see plainly, that an intolerating spirit must by degrees become obdurate. For what charity can be long preserved for those who we think must inevitably be damned? To love them would be to hate God for punishing them. To act then on principles of humanity, we must take upon ourselves to condemn actions only, and not men. Let us not assume the horrible function of devils. Let us not so lightly throw open the gates of hell for our fellow-creatures. Alas! if all those are destined to be eternally miserable who
deceive

deceive themselves, where is the mortal who can avoid it?

O my friends! of what a load have you eased my heart? In teaching me that an error in judgment is no crime, you have delivered me from a thousand tormenting scruples. I leave to others the subtle interpretation of dogmas which I do not comprehend, and content myself with those glaring truths which strike and at once convince me; those practical truths which instruct me in my duty. As to any thing farther, I abide by the rule of your old answer to Mr Wolmar*. A man is not master of his own sentiments to believe or disbelieve what he pleases. Can it be a crime for one not to be a logician? No, it is not the business of conscience to instruct us in the truth of things, but in the maxims of our duty. It does not teach us to reason well, but to act aright. In what can my husband be criminal before God? Does he turn his eye from the contemplation of the Deity? God himself hath hid his face from his view. He does not shun the truth; the truth avoids him. He is not actuated by pride; he does not seek to convert any one to his own opinion. He is glad they are of a different one. He approves of our sentiments, he wishes he had the same, but cannot. He is deprived of our consolations and our hopes. He acts uprightly without even expecting a recompense: he is in fact more virtuous, more disinterested than we. He is indeed truly to be pitied! but wherefore should he be punished? No: goodness, sincerity, honesty, virtue,

* See page 177.

tue, these are what heaven requires, and what it will undoubtedly reward : these constitute the true service which the Deity requires, and that service Mr Wolmar most invariably performs. If God judges of our faith by our works, to be truly virtuous is to believe in him. A true Christian is a virtuous man : the real infidels are the vicious.

Be not surpris'd, therefore, my dear friend, that I do not dispute with you many particulars of your letter, concerning which we are not of the same opinion. I know too well what you are, to be in pain about what you believe. What do all those idle questions about free agency concern me ? Whether I myself have the power to do good, or can obtain it by prayer, if in the end I am enabled to do it, does it not amount to the same thing ? Whether I acquire what is wanting by asking for it, or the Deity grants it to my prayers, if it be necessary to ask in order to have it, is not this a sufficient explanation ? Happy enough to agree about the principal articles of our faith, why need we inquire farther ? Ought we to be desirous of penetrating into the bottomless abyss of metaphysics, and, in disputing about the essence of the Deity, throw away the short time which is allotted us here to revere and honour him ? We are ignorant what he is ; but we know that he exists, and that is sufficient ; he manifests himself in his works, we feel him constantly within us. We may dispute, but cannot sincerely disbelieve his existence. He has given us that degree of sensibility which enables us to perceive, to embrace him ; let us pity those to whom he has
not

not imparted such a portion of susceptibility, without flattering ourselves that we shall be able to make them sensible of what they cannot feel. Let us respect his decrees in silence, and do our duty: this is the best method to make profelytes.

Do you know any man of better sense or a more enlightened understanding than Mr Wolmar? Do you know any one more sincere, more upright, more just, less subject to the controul of his passions; who will be a greater gainer by divine justice or the soul's immortality? Do you know any man more nervous, more sublime, more convincing in a dispute, than Lord B——? is there any person by his virtue more worthy of entering on the defence of the cause of God, more certain of his existence, more sincerely penetrated with the idea of divine majesty, more zealous for his glory, and more capable of supporting it? Yet you have been a witness of what passed during three months at Clarens: you have seen two men, having the highest esteem and respect for each other, and equally disdainful of the pedantry and quirk of scholastic logic, pass a whole winter in prudent and peaceful as well as lively and profound argumentations, with a view to convert each other; you have seen them attack and defend themselves, and take every advantage of which human understanding is capable; and that on a subject wherein both, being equally interested, desired nothing so earnestly as to be of one mind.

What was the consequence? their mutual esteem is augmented, and yet both retain their former sentiments. If such an example does not
for

for ever cure a prudent man of the rage of dispute, the love of truth I am sure never will.

For my part, I have thrown aside, and that for ever, such an useless weapon; and am determined never to mention a single word more to my husband about religion, unless it be to give a reason for mine. Not that a notion of divine toleration has rendered me indifferent to his. I must confess, that, though I am become tranquil about his future state, I do not find I am the less zealous for his conversion. I would lay down my life to see him once convinced of the truth of divine revelation, if not for the sake of his future happiness, at least for his happiness in this life. For of how many pleasures is he not on this account deprived? What sentiments can give him comfort in his afflictions? What spectator excites him to those good deeds he performs in secret? What rewards does he hope for from his virtue? How can he look upon death? No, I hope he will not meet it in this terrible situation. There remains but one expedient more for me to try to prevent it; and to that I consecrate the remainder of my life. This is, not to convince, but to affect him: to set him a prevailing example, and to make religion so amiable that he shall not be able to resist her charms. Ah! my friend! what a forcible argument against infidelity is the life of a true Christian! Do you believe there is a being on earth proof against it? This is the task I impose on myself for the future; assist me to perform it. Mr Wolmar is cold, but not insensible. What a picture might we lay open to his heart? his friends, his children, his wife, all uniting to
his

his edification! When, without preaching about God in our discourses, we shall demonstrate him by those actions which he inspires, by those virtues of which he is the author, by the pleasure we take in his service: when he shall see a sketch of paradise in his own house; when an hundred times a-day he shall be compelled to cry out, "Human nature is of itself incapable of this; something divine must prevail here."

If my enterprize pleases you, if you find yourself worthy to concur in it, come and let us pass our days together, and never part more till death. If the project displeases or frightens you, listen to the dictates of your conscience; that will teach you your duty. I have no more to say.

Agreeable to what Lord B—— intimates, I shall expect you both towards the latter end of next month. You will hardly know your apartment again; but in the alteration made in it you will discover the care of a good friend, who took a pleasure in ornamenting it for you. You will find there, also, a small assortment of books, which she bought for you at Geneva, of a better taste than the *Adonis*; not but that for the jest's sake you will find that too. You must however be discreet; for, as she would not have you know this is her doing, I hasten to finish my letter before she comes to forbid my speaking of it.

Adieu, my dear friend. Our party of pleasure to the castle of Chillon will take place to-morrow without you. It will not be the better for that. The bailiff has invited us with our children, which leaves me no excuse; but I know

know not why, and yet I cannot help wishing we were safe returned.

L E T T E R CLIX.

From FANNY ANET.

OH Sir! O my benefactor! what sad tidings am I ordered to write to you! Madam—my poor mistress—good God! methinks I see already how frightened you are! but you cannot see the affliction we are all in here.—But I have not a moment to lose—I must tell you.—I must run—O that I had already told you all!—Ah, what will become of you, when you know our misfortune!

The whole family went out yesterday to dine at Chillon. The baron, who was going into Savoy to spend some days at the castle of Blonay, went away after dinner. The company attended him a little way, and afterwards walked along the dyke. Mrs Orbe and the bailiff's lady went before with my master; my mistress followed, having hold by one hand of Harriot and by the other of Marcellin. I came after with the eldest. His honour, the bailiff, who had staid behind to speak to somebody, came up; and joining the company, offered my mistress his arm; which, in order to accept of, she sent Marcellin to me. I ran forward to meet him, while the child did the same towards me; but, in running, his foot slipped, and he fell unhappily into the water. I screamed out, when my mistress, turning her head and seeing the child

in the water, flew back in an instant and threw herself in after him.

Ah, unhappy that I am ! why did I not throw myself in too ! better had I been drowned on the spot !——With difficulty I kept the eldest from leaping after its mother, who kept struggling with the other in her arms.——No boat, nor people were at hand, so that some time passed before they could be got out of the water——the child soon recovered, but as for the mother——the fright, the fall, the condition she was in——ah none knows better than I the danger of such a fall ! she was taken out, and remained a good while insensible. The moment she came to herself, she inquired eagerly after the child—heavens ! with what transport did she embrace him ! I thought she was quite well again ; but her spirits lasted her but for a moment : she insisted on being brought home, but fainted away several times during the journey. By some orders she gave me, I saw she believed she should not recover. Her fears were, alas ! too true ! she will never recover. Mrs Orbe is a good deal more altered than she. They are all distracted ; I am the most sensible in the whole house.——Why should I be uneasy ? ah ! my good mistress, if I lose you I shall never have occasion for another.——O my dear Sir ! may heaven enable you to support this trial ! Adieu ! the physician is this moment coming out of the chamber. I must run to meet him :—if he gives me hopes, I will let you know it. If I say nothing——

L E T.

LETTER CLX.

From Mrs ORBE.

IT is fulfilled!—Imprudent, unfortunate man! unhappy dreamer! you will now indeed never see her more—alas! the vail—Julia is no more.—

She has herself written to you, I refer you to her letter: respect, I charge you, her last request. Great and many are the obligations you have to discharge on this side the grave.—

LETTER CLXI.

From Mr WOLMAR.

I HAVE suffered you to indulge the first transports of your grief: my writing to you would but have aggravated your sorrow, as I was no better qualified to relate than you to read our sad tale. At present, possibly, such a relation may not be disagreeable to either of us. As nothing remains but the remembrance of her, my heart takes a delight in recalling every token of that remembrance to my mind. You will have some consolation in shedding tears to her memory; but of that grand relief of the unfortunate I am constitutionally deprived, and am therefore unhappier than you.

It is not, however, of her illness, but of herself, I would write. Another might have thrown herself into the water to save her child; such an

accident, her fever, her death, are natural, and may be common to other mortals : but the employment of her last moments, her conversation, her sentiments, her fortitude, all these are peculiar to Julia. She was no less singular in the hour of death, than she had been during the whole course of her life ; and as I was the sole witness to many particulars, you can learn them from me alone.

You already know that her fright, her agitation, the fall, and the water she had imbibed, threw her into fainting fits, from which she did not recover until after she was brought home. On being carried into the house, she asked again for the child ; the child was brought ; and, seeing him walk about and return her caresses, she became apparently easy, and consented to take a little rest. Her sleep was but short, and as the physician was not yet come, she made us sit round on the bed ; that is, Fanny, her cousin, and me. She talked to us about her children, of the great diligence and care which her plan of education required, and of the danger of a moment's neglect. Without making her illness of any great importance, she foresaw, she said, that it would prevent her for some time from discharging her part of that duty, and charged us to divide it amongst us.

She enlarged on her own projects, on yours, on the most proper means to carry them into execution ; on the observations she had made as to what would promote or injure them ; and, in a word, on every thing which might enable us to supply her place, in the discharge of the duties of a mother, so long as she might be prevented

vented from it herself. I thought so much precaution unnecessary for one who imagined she should be prevented from exercising such employment only for a few days : but what added to my apprehensions, was to hear her enter into a long and particular charge respecting Harriot. As to her sons, she contented herself with what concerned their education in the earliest infancy, as if relying on another for the care of their youth : but in speaking of Harriot, she went farther, extending her remarks even to her coming of age ; and, being sensible that nothing could supply the place of those reflections which her own experience dictated, she gave us a clear and methodical abstract of the plan of education she had laid down, recommending it to the mother in the most lively and affecting manner.

All these exhortations, respecting the education of young persons, and the duty of mothers, mixed with frequent applications to herself, could not fail to render the conversation extremely interesting : I saw indeed that it affected her too much. In the mean time, her cousin held one of her hands, pressing it every now and then to her lips, and bathing it with tears at every reply : Fanny was not less moved : and as for Julia herself, I observed the big tears swell out of her eyes and steal down her cheeks ; but she was afraid to let us see she wept, lest it should alarm us. But I then saw, that she knew her life was drawing towards its final period. My only hope was that her fears might deceive her, and represent the danger greater than it really was. Unhappily, however, I knew her too well to

build much upon such a deception. I endeavoured several times to stop her, and at last begged of her not to waste her spirits by talking so much at once on a subject which might be continued at our leisure. Ah! my dear, replied she, do not you know that nothing hurts a woman so much as silence? and, since I find myself a little feverish, I may as well employ my discourse about useful matters as prattle away the time about trifles.

The arrival of the physician put the whole house into a confusion, which it is impossible to describe. All the domestics were gathered about the door of the chamber, where they waited with their arms folded and anxious looks, to know his opinion of their mistress's situation, as if their own destiny were depending. This sight threw poor Mrs Orbe into such an agony of grief, that I began to be afraid of her senses. Under different pretences, therefore, I dismissed them, that their presence might no longer affect her. The physician gave us indeed a little hope, but in such vague terms that it served to convince me there was none. Julia was also reserved on account of her cousin. When the doctor left the chamber, I followed him, which Clara was also going to do; but Julia detained her, and gave me a wink which I understood, and therefore immediately told the physician, that if there were any real danger he should as carefully conceal it from Mrs Orbe as from the patient, lest her despair should render her incapable of attending her friend. He told me the case was indeed dangerous; but that four-and-twenty hours being hardly elapsed since the accident,

cident, it required more time to form a certain judgment : that the succeeding night might determine the fate of the patient ; but that he could not positively pronounce any thing till the third day. Fanny alone was by on his saying this, on whom we prevailed with some difficulty to stifle her emotions, and agreed upon what was proper to tell Mrs Orbe and the rest of the family.

Toward the evening, Julia prevailed with her cousin, who had sat up with her the preceding night, and was desirous of continuing her vigilance, to go to bed for some hours. In the mean time, the patient being informed that she was to be bled in the foot, and that the physician was prescribing for her, she sent for him to her bed-side, and addressed him thus :

“ Mr Bouffon, when it is necessary to flatter
“ a timid patient as to the danger of his case,
“ the precaution is humane, and I approve of
“ it; but it is a piece of cruelty to lavish equally
“ ly on all, the disagreeable remedies which to
“ many may be superfluous. Prescribe for me
“ every thing that you think will be really useful,
“ and I will punctually follow your prescriptions.
“ But as to those of mere experiment, I beg you will excuse me : it is my
“ body and not my mind which is disordered;
“ and I am not afraid to end my days, but to
“ mispend those which remain. The last moments
“ of life are too precious to be thrown away.
“ If you cannot prolong mine, therefore, I beg you will at least not shorten them,
“ by preventing me from employing them as I
“ ought. Either recover me entirely, or leave
“ me;

“me; I can die alone.” Thus, my friend, did this woman, so mild and timid on ordinary occasions, know how to exert herself in a resolute and serious manner at this important crisis.

The night was cruel and decisive. Suffocation, oppression, fainting, her skin dry and burning. An ardent fever tormented her; during the continuance of which she was heard frequently to call out *Marcellin*, as if to prevent his running into the water; and to pronounce also another name, formerly repeated on a like occasion. The next day the physician told me plainly, that he did not think she could live three days. I alone was made privy to this afflicting piece of information; and the most terrible hour of my life was that wherein I kept it a secret in my breast, without knowing what use to make of it. I strayed out alone into the garden, musing on the measures I ought to take; not without many afflicting reflections on the misfortune of being reduced, in the last stage of life, to that solitude of which I was sufficiently tired even before I had experienced a state more agreeable.

I had promised Julia the night before, to tell her faithfully the opinion of the physician, and she had engaged me by every prevailing argument to keep my word. I felt that engagement on my conscience: but what to do I was greatly at a loss. Shall I, said I to myself, in order to discharge a useless and chimerical duty, afflict her soul with the news, and lengthen the pangs of death? to tell her the hour of her dissolution, is it not in fact to anticipate the fatal moment? in so short an interval what will become

come of the desires, the hopes, the elements of life? shall I kill my Julia?

Thus meditating on what I should do, I walked on with long and hasty strides, and in an agitation of mind I had never before experienced. It was not in my power to shake off the painful anxiety; it remained an insupportable weight on my spirits. At length I was determined by a sudden thought.

For whose sake, said I, do I deliberate? for her's, or for mine? On whose principles do I reason? is it on her system, or my own? What demonstration have I of the truth? In support of her system, she also has nothing but opinion; but that opinion carries with it the force of evidence, and is in her eyes a demonstration. What right have I, in a matter which relates chiefly to her, to prefer my opinion, which I acknowledge to be doubtful, to her's which she thinks demonstrated? Let us compare the consequences of both. According to her's, her disposition in the last hour of her life will decide her fate to all eternity. According to mine, all that I can do for her will be a matter of indifference in three days. According to my system, she will be then insensible to every thing: but if she be in the right, what a difference will there be! eternal happiness or misery! perhaps—that word is terrible—wretch! risque thy own soul, and not her's.

This was the first doubt I ever had concerning that scepticism you have so often attacked; but it was not the last. This doubt, however, freed me from the other. I immediately resolved; and for fear my mind should change, ran di-

directly to Julia's chamber, where, after dismissing every body from their attendance, I sat down by her bed-side. I did not make use of those trifling precautions which are necessary with little minds. I was indeed for some time silent; but she looked at me, and seemed to read my thoughts. Then, holding out her hand, Do you think, said she, you bring me news? no, my dear friend, I know it already; the cold hand of death is upon me; we must part for ever.

She proceeded, and continued with me a long conversation; of which I may one day give you an account; and during which she engraved her testament on my heart. If I had indeed been ignorant of her disposition before, her temper of mind at this time would sufficiently have informed me.

She asked me, if her danger was known in the house. I told her, Every one was greatly apprehensive, but that they knew nothing for certain, and that the physician had acquainted me only with his opinion. On this she conjured me carefully to keep it a secret for the remainder of the day. Clara, continued she, will not be able to support this stroke, unless it comes from my hand. I shall take upon me that afflicting office to-night. It is chiefly for this reason that I desired to have the advice of a physician, that I might not subject her unnecessarily, and merely on my own suggestions, to so cruel a trial. Take care that she may know nothing of it before the time, or you will certainly risque the loss of a friend, and your children that of a mother.

She

She then asked me after her father. I owned that I had sent an express to him; but took care to conceal from her, that the messenger, instead of contenting himself with delivering my letter, as I had ordered him, blundered out a story, from which my old friend, falsely collecting that his daughter was drowned, fell down stairs in a swoon and hurt himself; so that he kept his bed at Blonay. The hopes of seeing her father, affected her very sensibly; and the certainty I had of the vanity of such hope, had no small share in my uneasiness.

The paroxysms of the preceding night had rendered her extremely weak: nor did this long conversation at all increase her strength. In this feeble situation, therefore, she strove to get a little sleep in the day-time; nor did I know, till two days after, that she did not sleep the whole time.

The family continued in great anxiety; every one waiting in mournful silence for each other to remove their uneasiness, yet, without daring to ask any questions for fear of being told more than they wished to know. If there were any good news, they said to themselves, every one would be eager enough to tell it; and the bad we shall know but too soon. In this terrible suspense they were satisfied so long as they heard of no alteration for the worse. Amidst this dreadful silence, Mrs Orbe only was active and talkative. As soon as she came out of Julia's chamber, instead of going to rest, she ran up and down the house, asking what the doctor said to the one, and to the other. She had sat up all the preceding night, and could not be ignorant

rant of what she had seen; but she strove even to impose on herself, and to distrust the evidence of her senses. Those she interrogated always giving her favourable answers, encouraged her to ask others, which she continued to do with such an air of solicitude and poignant distress, that whoever had known the truth could not have been prevailed upon to tell it her.

In the presence of Julia she concealed her anxiety, and indeed the affecting object which she had before her eyes was sufficiently afflicting to suppress her vivacity. She was above all things solicitous to hide her fears from Julia; but she could very ill conceal them. Her trouble even appeared in her affectation to hide it. Julia, on her part also, spared no pains to deceive her cousin, as to the true state of her case. Without making light of her illness, she affected to speak of it as a thing that was already past, seeming uneasy only at the time necessary to restore her. How greatly did I suffer to see them mutually striving to conquer each other, while I knew that neither of them entertained that hope in their own breasts, with which each endeavoured to inspire the other.

Mrs Orbe had sat up the two preceding nights, and had not been undressed for three days. Julia proposed, therefore, that she should retire to her own bed: but she refused. Well then, said Julia, let a little bed be made up for you in my chamber; if, added she, as if she had just thought of it, you will not take part of mine. Come, my dear, says she, what say you? I am not worse, and, if you have no objection, you shall sleep with me. This proposal was accepted.

ed. For my part, they turned me out of the room, and really I stood in need of rest.

I rose early the next morning; and, being anxious for what might have passed in the night, as soon as I heard them stirring, I went into her chamber. From the situation in which Mrs Orbe appeared the preceding evening, I expected to find her extremely agitated. In entering the room, however, I saw her sitting on the settee, spiritless and pale, or rather of a livid complexion; her eyes heavy and dead; yet she appeared calm and tranquil, but spoke little. As for Julia, she appeared less feeble than overnight: the tone of her voice was strong, and her gesture animated; she seemed indeed to have borrowed the vivacity of her cousin. I could easily perceive, however, that this promising appearance was in a great measure the effect of her fever; but I remarked also in her looks that something had given her a secret joy which contributed to it not a little; but of which I could not discover the cause. The physician confirmed his former opinion, the patient continued also in the same sentiments, and there remained no hope.

Being obliged to leave her for some time, I observed, in coming again into her apartment, that every thing appeared in great order. She had caused flower-pots to be placed on the chimney-piece; here curtains were half-open and tied back; the air of the room was changed; a grateful odour every-where diffusing itself; so that no one would have taken it for the bed-chamber of a sick person. The same taste and elegance appeared also in her dishabille; all

VOL. III. I i which

which gave her rather the air of a woman of quality, waiting to receive company, than of a country lady who was preparing for her last moments. She saw my surprise, smiled at it, and, guessing my sentiments, was going to speak to me, when the children were brought into the room. These now engaged her attention ; and you may judge whether, finding herself ready to part from them for ever, her caresses were cold or moderate. I even took notice that she turned oftener, and with more warmth, to him who was the cause of her death, as if he was become more dear to her on that account.

These embraces, sighs, and transports, were all mysteries to the poor children. They loved her indeed tenderly ; but it was with that tenderness peculiar to their age. They comprehended nothing of her condition, of the repetition of her caresses, of her regret at never seeing them more : as they saw us sorrowful and affected, they wept ; but knew nothing more. We may teach children to repeat the word death ; but we cannot give them any idea of it : they neither fear it for themselves or others ; they fear to suffer pain, but not to die. When the excess of pain drew complaints from their poor mother, they pierced the air with their cries ; but when we talked to them of losing her, they seemed stupid, and comprehended nothing. Harriot alone, being a little older than the others, and of a sex in which understanding and sentiment appear earlier than in the other, seemed troubled and frightened to see her little mamma in bed, whom she used always to see stirring a-
bout

bout with her children. I remember, that, on this occasion, Julia made a reflection quite in character, on the ridiculous vanity of Vespasian, who kept his bed so long as he was able to do any thing, and rose when he could do no more*. I know not, says she, if it be necessary that an emperor should die out of his bed: but this I know, that the mother of a family should never take to her bed, unless to die.

After having wept over the children, and taken every one of them apart, particularly Harriot, whom she kept some time, and who lamented and sobbed grievously, she called them all three together; gave them her blessing; and, pointing to Mrs Orbe, Go, my children, said she, go and throw yourselves at the feet of your mother; this is she whom Providence has given you, depriving you of nothing in taking me. Immediately they all ran to her, threw themselves on their knees, and, laying hold of her hands, called her their good mamma, their second mother. Clara stooped forward to embrace them, but strove in vain to speak; she could only utter a few broken and imperfect exclamations, amidst sighs and sobs that stifled her voice. Judge if Julia was not moved! the scene indeed became too affecting; for which reason I interrupted it.

As soon as it was over, we sat down again

I i 2

round

* This is not quite exact. Suetonius tells us that Vespasian employed himself as usual, and gave audience on his death-bed: but perhaps he had done better to have risen to give audience, and to have gone to bed again to die. This I know, that Vespasian, if not a great man, was at least a great prince; but it is not a time to put on the comedian at the hour of death.

round the bed; and, though the vivacity of Julia was a little suppressed by the foregoing scene, she preserved the same air of content in her looks: she talked on every subject with all that attention and regard which bespeaks a mind at ease; nothing escaped her: she was as intent on the conversation as if she had nothing else to think of. She proposed that we should dine in her chamber, that she might have as much of our company as possible for the short time she had to live: you may believe this proposal was not on our part rejected.

The dinner was served up without noise, confusion, or disorder, but with as much regularity as if it had been in the Apollo. Fanny and the children dined with us. Julia, taking notice that every one wanted an appetite, had the art to prevail on us to eat of almost every thing; one time by pretending to instruct the cook, at another by asking whether she might not venture to taste this or that, and then by recommending it to us to take care of our health, without which we should not be capable of doing her the service her illness required. In short, no mistress of a family, however solicitous to do the honours of her house, could in full health have shewn, even to strangers, more obliging or more amiable marks of her kindness, than those which dying Julia expressed for her family. Nothing of what I expected happened, nothing of what really happened ever entered my head. In short, I was lost in astonishment.

After dinner, word was brought up that the clergyman was come. He came as a friend to the family, as he often favoured us with a visit.

Though

Though I had not sent for him, as Julia did not request it, I must confess to you I was pleased to hear he was come, and imagine the most zealous believer could not on the same occasion have welcomed him with greater pleasure. His presence indeed promised the removal of many of my doubts, and some relief from my perplexity.

You will recollect the motives for my telling her of her approaching end. By the effect which according to my notions, such a shocking piece of information should have had on her, how could I conceive that which it really had? how could I imagine that a woman so devout as not to pass a day, when in health, without meditation, who made the exercise of prayer her delight and amusement, should at such a time as this, when she had but two days to live, when she was just ready to appear before her awful Judge, instead of making peace with God and her conscience, amuse herself in ornamenting her chamber, chatting with her friends, and diverting them at their meals, without ever dropping a word concerning God's grace, or her own salvation? What could I think of her, and her real sentiments? how reconcile her conduct with the notions I had entertained of her piety? how could I reconcile the use she made of her last moments to what she had said to the physician, of their great importance? All this appeared to me an inexplicable enigma; for tho' I did not expect to find her practising all the hypocritical airs of the devotees, it seemed to me, however, high time to think of what she judged of so much importance, and that it should

suffer no delay. If one is devout amidst the noise and hurry of life, how can one be otherwise at the moment we are going to quite it, and when there remains no longer time to think of another?

These reflections led me farther than I thought I ever should proceed. I began to be uneasy lest my opinions, indiscreetly maintained, might at length have gained too much upon her belief. I had not adopted her's, and yet I was not willing that she should have renounced them. Had I been sick, I should certainly have died in my own way of thinking, but I was desirous that she should die also in her's. These contradictory notions will appear to you very extravagant; I myself do not find them very reasonable; they were, however, such as really suggested themselves at that time. I do not undertake to justify, I only relate them.

At length the time drew near when my doubts were to be cleared up: for it was easy to see, that, sooner or latter, the minister would turn the conversation on the object of his duty; and though Julia had been capable of disguise, it would be too difficult for her to do it in such a manner that a person attentive and prepossessed as I was, should not perceive her real sentiments.

Accordingly it happened as I expected. To pass over, however, the common-place compliments with which this worthy clergyman introduced the subject, as well as the affecting manner in which he represented the happiness of crowning a well-spent life by a Christian exit; he added, that he had indeed remembered her

to

to have maintained opinions, on some points, different from those of the church, or such as may be most reasonably deduced from the sacred writings; but that, as she had never persisted in defending them, he hoped she would die, as she had lived, in the communion of the faithful, and acquiesce in all the particulars of their common confession.

As Julia's answer removed at once all my doubts, and differed a good deal from the common-place discourses on such occasions, I shall give it you almost word for word; for I listened to it very attentively, and committed it to paper immediately after.

“ Permit me, Sir, said she, to begin by
 “ thanking you for all the care you have taken
 “ to conduct me in the paths of virtue and
 “ Christianity, and for that complacency with
 “ which you have borne with my errors when
 “ I have gone astray. Filled with a due respect
 “ for your zeal, as well as gratitude for all your
 “ goodness, I declare with pleasure that it is to
 “ you I am indebted for all my good resolutions,
 “ and that you have always directed me
 “ to do what was right, and to believe what
 “ was true.

“ I have lived and I die in the protestant communion,
 “ whose maxims are deduced from scripture and reason;
 “ concerning which my heart hath always confirmed what my lips uttered;
 “ and though I may not have had always that docility in regard to your precepts
 “ which perhaps I ought, it has arisen from my aversion to all kind of hypocrisy: that which
 “ I could not believe, I never could profess; I
 “ have

“ have always sincerely sought what was most
“ conformable to truth, and the glory of my
“ Creator. I may have been deceived in my
“ research; not having the vanity to think I
“ have always been in the right. I may, in-
“ deed, have been constantly in the wrong;
“ but my intention has been invariably good.
“ This was as much as was in my own power.
“ If God did not vouchsafe to enlighten my un-
“ derstanding farther, he is too merciful and
“ just to demand of me an account of what he
“ has not committed to my care.

“ This, Sir, is all I think necessary to say on
“ the opinions I profess. As to the rest, let
“ my present situation answer for me. With
“ my head distracted by illness, and subjected
“ to the delirium of a fever, is it now a proper
“ time to endeavour to reason better than I did
“ when in health, when my understanding was
“ unimpaired and as sound as I received it from
“ my Maker?—If I was deceived then, am I
“ less subject to be so now? and in my present
“ weakness, does it depend on me to believe o-
“ therwise than I did when in full health and
“ strength of body and mind? It is our reason
“ which determines our belief, but mine has
“ lost its best faculties; what dependance then
“ could be made on the opinions I should now
“ adopt without it? What now remains for me
“ to do, is to appeal to what I believed before;
“ for the uprightness of my intention is the
“ same, though I have lost my judgment. If I
“ am in an error, I am sorry for and detest it;
“ and this is sufficient to set my heart at ease as
“ to my belief.

“ As

“ As to my preparation for death ; that, Sir,
 “ is made ; badly indeed, I own ; but it is done
 “ in the best manner I could, and at least much
 “ better than I can do it now. I endeavoured
 “ to discharge that important part of my duty
 “ before I became incapable of it. I prayed in
 “ health ; at present, now I am weak, I am re-
 “ signed. The best prayers of the sick are pa-
 “ tience and resignation. The preparation of
 “ death, is a good life ; I know of no other.
 “ While I conversed with you, while I medita-
 “ ted by myself, while I endeavoured to dis-
 “ charge the duties which Providence ordained
 “ for me ; it was then I was preparing myself
 “ for death ; for meeting my God and Judge
 “ at my last hour. It was then I adored him
 “ with all my faculties and powers : what more
 “ can I now do, when I have lost them ? Is my
 “ languid soul in a condition to raise itself to
 “ the Almighty ? this remnant of a half-extin-
 “ guished life, absorbed in pain, is it worthy of
 “ being offered up to God ? No, Sir, he leaves
 “ it me to employ it for those he taught me to
 “ love, and from whom it is his sovereign will
 “ that I should now depart : I am going to leave
 “ them, to go to him ; it is therefore with them
 “ I should now concern myself ; I shall soon
 “ have nothing to do but with him alone. The
 “ last pleasure I take on earth, shall be in doing
 “ my last duty ; is not that to serve him and do
 “ his will, to discharge all those duties which
 “ humanity enjoins me before I throw it off en-
 “ tirely ? What have I to do to calm troubles
 “ which I have not ? My conscience is not
 “ troubled : if sometimes it has accused me, it
 “ has

“ has done it more when I was in health than
“ at present. It tells me now that God is more
“ merciful than I am criminal; and my confi-
“ dence increases as I find I approach nearer to
“ him. I do not present him with an imper-
“ fect, tardy, or forced repentance, which,
“ dictated by fear, can never be truly sincere,
“ and is only a snare by which the false peni-
“ tent is deceived. I do not present him with
“ the service of the remnant and latter end of
“ my days, full of pain and sorrow, a prey to
“ sickness, grief, anxiety, death; and which I
“ would not dedicate to his service till I could
“ do nothing else. No, I present before him
“ my whole life, full indeed of errors and
“ faults, but exempt from the remorse of the
“ impious, and the crimes of the wicked.

“ To what punishment can a just God con-
“ demn me? The reprobate, it is said, hate him.
“ Must he not first make me not love him?
“ No, I fear not to be found one of that num-
“ ber. O thou great eternal Being! supreme
“ Intelligence! Source of life and happiness!
“ Creator, Preserver, Father, Lord of nature!
“ God powerful and good, of whose existence I
“ never doubted for a moment, and under whose
“ eye I have always delighted to live! I know,
“ I rejoice, that I am going to appear before
“ thy throne. In a few days my soul, delivered
“ from its earthly tabernacle, shall begin to pay
“ thee more worthily that homage which will
“ constitute my happiness to all eternity. I
“ look upon what I shall be, till that moment
“ comes, as nothing. My body, indeed, still
“ lives; but my intellectual life is at an end.

“ I am

“ I am at the end of my career, and am already judged from what is past. To suffer, to die, is all that I have now to do: and this is nature’s work. I have endeavoured to live in such a manner as to have no occasion to concern myself at death; and now it approaches, I see it without fear. Those who sleep in the bosom of a father, are in no fear of being awaked.”

This discourse, begun in a grave and slow voice, and ending in a more elevated and animated tone, made on every one present, myself not excepted, an impression the more lively, as the eyes of her who pronounced it seemed to sparkle with a supernatural fire; rays of light seemed to encircle her brow; and, if there be any thing in this world which deserves the name of celestial, it was certainly the face of Julia, while she was thus speaking.

The minister himself was transported at what he heard; and, lifting up his hands and eyes to heaven, Good God! said he, behold the worship that truly honours thee! deign to render it propitious; for how seldom do mortals offer thee the like!

Madam, continued he, turning to Julia and approaching her bed, I thought to have instructed you, but have myself been instructed. I have nothing farther to say. You have that true faith, which knows how to love God. Bear with you that precious repose and testimony of a good conscience; it will not deceive you. I have seen many Christians in your situation, but never before saw any thing like this. What a difference between such a peaceful end, and that

that of those terrified sinners, who implore heaven with vain and idle prayers unworthy to be heard! Your death, Madam, is as exemplary as your life: you have lived to exercise your charity to mankind, and die a martyr to maternal tenderness. Whether it please God to restore you to us, to serve us as an example; or whether he is pleased to call you to himself, to crown your virtue with its due reward; may we all, so long as we survive, live like you, and in the end follow your example in death; we shall then be certain of happiness in that life which will never end.

He offered now to take his leave; but Julia prevailed on him to stay. You are one of my friends, said she to him, and one of those I take the greatest pleasure to see; it is for those my last moments are so precious. We are going to part for too long a time, to part so soon now. He was well pleased to stay, and I went out and left them.

At my return, I found the conversation continued still on the same subject; but in a less interesting manner. The minister complained much of that false notion, which makes religion only of use to persons on their death-bed, and which represents its ministers as men of ill omen. We are looked upon, says he, in common rather as the messengers of sorrow and death, than of the glad tidings of life and salvation: and that because, from the convenient opinion of the world that a quarter of an hour's repentance is sufficient to efface fifty years of guilt, we are only welcome at such a time. We must be clothed in a mournful habit, and affect a
mo-

morose air ; in short, nothing is spared to render us dismal and terrifying. It is yet worse, in other religious professions. A dying Roman catholic is surrounded by objects the most terrifying, and is pestered with ceremonies that in a manner bury him alive. By the pains they take to keep the devils from him, he imagines he sees his chamber full of them ; he dies a hundred times with fear before he expires ; and it is in this state of horror the church delights to plunge the dying sinner, in order to make the greater advantage of his purse.

Thank God, said Julia, that we were not brought up in those venal religions, which murder people to inherit their wealth ; and who, selling heaven to the rich, would extend even to the other world that unjust inequality which prevails in this. I do not at all doubt that such mournful ideas encourage infidelity, and create a natural aversion for that species of worship which adopts them. I hope, continued she, looking stedfastly at me, that he who may educate our children will adopt very different maxims ; and that he will not represent religion to them as a mournful exercise, by continually setting before them the prospect of death. If they learn once but to live well, they will of themselves know how to die.

In the continuation of this discourse, which became less affecting and more interrupted than I shall tell you, I fully comprehended the maxims of Julia, and the conduct at which I had been surpris'd. It appeared, that, perceiving her situation quite desperate, she contriv'd only to remove that useless and mournful appearance

which the fear of most persons when dying makes them put on. This she did, either to divert our affliction, or to banish from her own view a spectacle so moving, and at the same time unnecessary. Death, said she, is of itself sufficiently painful ! why must it be rendered hideous ? The care which others throw away in endeavouring to prolong their lives, I will employ to enjoy mine to the last moment. Shall I make an hospital of my apartment, a scene of disgust and trouble, when my last care will be to assemble in it all those that are most dear to me ? If I suffer the air to stagnate, I must banish my children, or expose their health to danger. If I put on a frightful dress and appearance myself, I shall be known no longer ; I shall be no longer the same person ; you will all remember to have loved me, and will be able to bear me no more. I shall, even alive, have the frightful spectacle of horror before me, which I shall be to my friends when I am dead. Instead of this, I have discovered the art to extend my life without prolonging it. I exist, I love, am loved, and live till the last breath forsakes me. The moment of death is nothing : the natural evil is a trifle ; and I have overcome all those of opinion.

This and a good deal of similar discourse passed between the patient, the minister, sometimes the doctor, Fanny, and me. Mrs Orbe was present all the while, but never joined in the conversation. Attentive to the wants of her friend, she was very assiduous to serve her when she wanted any assistance ; the rest of the time she remained immoveable, and almost inanimate ;

mate; she kept looking at her without speaking, and without understanding any thing of what was said.

As to myself; fearing that Julia would talk too much for her strength, I took the opportunity of the minister and physician's talking to each other aside, to tell her, in her ear, that she talked a great deal for a sick person, and reasoned very profoundly for one who conceived herself incapable of reasoning. Yes, replied she, very low, I talk too much for a person that is sick, but not for one that is dying; I shall very soon have nothing more to say. With respect to argument, I reason no more now; I have done with it. I have often reflected on my last illness; I am now to profit by my reflection. I am no longer capable of reflecting nor resolving; I am now only able to talk of what I have before thought of, and to practise what I have formerly resolved.

The remainder of the day passed away in nearly the same tranquillity, and almost in the same manner as if no sick person was in the house. Julia, just as in full health, calm and resigned, talked with the same good sense and the same spirit; putting on, now and then, an air of serenity approaching even to sprightliness. In short, I continued to observe a certain appearance of joy in her eyes, which increased my uneasiness, and concerning which I was determined to come to an explanation.

I delayed it no longer than the same evening: when, seeing I had an inclination to be left alone with her, she told me I had prevented her, for that she had something to say to me.

It is very well, replied I; but as I intimated my intention first, give me leave first to explain myself.

Then sitting down by her and looking at her attentively, My Julia, said I, my dear Julia, you have wounded my very soul. Yes, continued I, seeing her look upon me with some surprise, I have penetrated your sentiments; you are glad to die, you rejoice to leave me. Reflect on my behaviour to you since we have lived together: have I ever deserved on your part so cruel a desire? At that instant she clasped both my hands in her's, and with a voice that thrilled my soul, Who? I! said she, I glad to leave you! Is it thus you penetrate my sentiments? Have you so soon forgot our conversation of yesterday? At least, interrupted I, you die content—I have seen—I see it, Hold, said she: it is indeed true, I die content; but it is content to die, as I have lived, worthy the name of your wife. Ask of me no more, for I can tell you no more: but here, continued she, taking a folded paper from under her pillow, here is what will unfold to you the mystery. This paper was a letter which I saw was directed to you. I give it to you open, added she, giving it into my hands, that, after having read it, you will determine within yourself, either to send or suppress it, according as you think best. I desire, however, you will not read it till I am no more; and I am certain you will grant that request. This letter, my dear St Preux, you will find inclosed. She who wrote it, I well know, is dead; but I can hardly bring myself to believe that she no longer exists.

She

She questioned me afterwards, expressing great uneasiness about her father. Is it possible, said she, that he should know his daughter to be in danger, and she not hear from him! Has any misfortune happened to him? or has he ceased to love me? Can it be that my father, so tender a father, should thus abandon his child? that he should let me die without seeing him; without receiving his last blessing; without embracing him in my last moments? Good God! how bitterly will he reproach himself, when he comes to find that he will see me no more!— This reflection so extremely afflicted her, that I judged she would be less affected to know her father was ill than to suspect his indifference. I therefore determined to acquaint her with the truth, and in fact found her more easy than under her first suspicions. The thoughts of never seeing him again, however, much affected her. Alas! said she, what will become of him when I am gone? Shall he live to survive his whole family! What a life of solitude will his be? It is impossible he should long survive! At this moment nature resumed its empire, and the horrors of approaching death were extremely perceptible. She sighed, clasped her hands, lifted up her eyes to heaven; and, I saw plainly, endeavoured to pray, with all that difficulty which she before observed always attended the prayers of the sick.

When it was over, she turned to me; and, complaining that she felt herself very weak, told me, she foresaw this would be the last time we should have an opportunity of conversing together. I conjure you, therefore, continued she,

by our sacred union, in the name of those dear infants, the pledges of our love, harbour no longer such unjust suspicions of your wife. Can I rejoice to leave you? You, the business of whose life it has been to instruct and make me happy; you, who of all the men in the world, were the most capable to make me so; you, with whom only perhaps I could have lived within the bounds of discretion and virtue! No! believe me, if I could set any value upon life, it would be that I might spend it with you. —These words, pronounced with great tenderness, affected me to that degree, that as I pressed her hands frequently with my lips, I found them wet with my tears. I never before thought my eyes made for weeping. These tears were the first I ever shed since my birth, and shall be the last till the hour of my death. They were shed for Julia, in whom fled every thing on earth that could draw from me a tear.

This was a day of great fatigue for poor Julia. Her preparation of Mrs Orbe in the preceding night, her interview with the children in the morning, that with the minister in the afternoon, together with the above conversation with me in the evening, had quite exhausted her. She betook herself to rest, and slept better that night than on the preceding, whether on account of her lassitude, or that in fact her fever and paroxysms were less violent.

Early the next morning, word was brought me that a stranger, very indifferently dressed, desired very earnestly to speak particularly to Julia: and though he was informed of her situation, he still continued his importunity, saying,
his

his business related to an act of great charity, that he knew Mrs Wolmar very well, and that while she had life remaining, she would take pleasure in exerting her benevolence. As Julia had established it as an inviolable rule, that no person, particularly such as appeared to be in distress, should be turned away, the servants brought me word of the man and his request: on which I ordered him in. His appearance was mean to the greatest degree, being clothed almost in rags, and having in his air and manner all the symptoms of indigence. I did not observe, however, any thing further either in his looks or discourse to make me suspicious of him; though he still persisted in his resolution of telling his business to none but Julia. I told him, that if it related to any remedy he might be possessed of to save her life, I would give him all the recompense he might expect from her, without troubling her in her present extremity. No, Sir, replied he, poor as I am, I desire not your money. I demand only what belongs to me, what I esteem beyond all the treasures on earth, what I have lost by my own folly, and what Mrs Wolmar alone, to whom I owe it, can a second time restore.

This discourse, though unintelligible, determined me, however, what to do. A designing knave might indeed have said as much, but he could never have said it in the same manner. He required that none of the servants should be present, a precaution which seemed mysterious and strange; I indulged him, and introduced him to Julia. He had said that he was known to Mrs Orbe; he passed by her, however, with-

without her taking notice of him, at which I was a little surpris'd. Julia recollected him immediately. Their meeting was extremely affecting. Clara, hearing a noise, came forward, and soon remembered her old acquaintance, not without some tokens of joy ; but these were soon checked by her affliction. One sentiment only engrossed her attention, and her heart was insensible to every thing else.

It is needless, I imagine, to tell you who this person was ; a thousand ideas will rise up in your memory and suggest it. But whilst Julia was comforting him, however, she was seized with a violent stoppage of her breath, and became so ill that we thought she was going to expire. To prevent any farther surprise or distraction, at a time when her relief only was to be thought on, I put the man into the closet, and bid him lock himself in. Fanny was then called up, and after some time Julia recovered from her fit ; when, looking round and seeing us all in a consternation about her, she said, Never mind, children, this is only an essay ; it is nothing like so painful as one would think.

All was soon tranquil again ; but the alarm was so great, that I quite forgot the man in the closet, till Julia whispered me to know what was become of him. This was not, however, till dinner was served up and we were all sat down to table. I would have gone into the closet to speak to him, but he had locked the door on the inside as I had directed him ; I was obliged, therefore, to have patience till after dinner.

During our repast, du Bosson, who dined with us, speaking of a young widow who was going

going to marry again, made some reflections on the misfortunes of widows in general; to which, I replied, the fortune of those was still harder who were widows while their husbands were living. That, indeed, Sir, answered Fanny, who saw this discourse was directed to her, is too true, especially if such husbands are beloved. The conversation then turned upon her's; and, as she always spoke of him very affectionately, it was natural for her to do so now, at a time when the loss of a benefactress threatened to make that of her husband still more severe. This indeed she did in the most affecting terms, commending the natural goodness of his disposition, lamenting the bad examples by which he had been seduced, and so sincerely regretting his loss, that, being sufficiently disposed before to sorrow, she burst out into a flood of tears. At this instant the closet-door flew open, and the poor man, rushing out, threw himself at her feet, embraced her knees, and mingled his tears with her's. She was holding a glass in her hand, which immediately fell to the ground; while the poor creature was so affected with joy and surprise that she had fallen into a fit, had not proper care been instantly taken to prevent it.

What followed is easily imagined. It was known in a moment over the whole house that Claude Anet was come, the husband of our good Fanny! What a festival! He was hardly got out of the chamber before he was stripped of his tatters and dressed in a decent manner. Had each of the servants had but two shirts a-piece, Anet would soon have had as many as them all. They had indeed so far prevented me,

me, that, when I went out with a design to get him equipped, I was obliged to make use of my authority to make them take back the cloaths they had furnished him.

In the mean time, Fanny would not leave her mistress. In order, however, to give her an opportunity of an hour or two's conversation with her husband, we pretended the children wanted to take an airing, and sent them both to take care of them.

This scene did not disturb Julia so much as the preceding ones. There was nothing in it disagreeable, and it rather did her good than harm. Clara and I passed the afternoon with her by ourselves, and had two hours of calm uninterrupted conversation, which she rendered the most agreeable and interesting of any we had ever experienced in our lives.

She began with some observations on the affecting scene we had just beheld, and which recalled strongly to her mind the times of her early youth. Then, following the order of events, she made a short recapitulation of the incidents of her life; with a view to shew, that, taking it for all in all, she had been fortunate and happy; that she had risen gradually to the highest pinnacle of earthly happiness; and that the accident, which now cut her off in the middle of her days, seemed in all appearance, according to the natural course of things, to mark the point of separation between the good and evil of mortal life.

She expressed her gratitude to heaven in that it had been pleased to give her a susceptible and benevolent heart, a sound understanding, and
an

an agreeable person; in that it had been pleased to give her birth in a land of liberty, and not in a country of slaves; that she came of an honourable family, and not of an ignoble or criminal race; that she was born to a moderate fortune, and not either to the superfluous riches of the great, which corrupt the mind, or to the indigence of the poor, which debases it. She felicitated herself that she was born of parents, both of them good and virtuous, replete with justice and honour, and who, tempering the faults of each other, had formed her judgment on theirs, without subjecting her to their foibles or prejudices. She boasted the advantages she had enjoyed, of being educated in a rational and holy religion; which, so far from debasing, elevates and ennobles mankind; which, neither favouring impiety nor fanaticism, permits its professors to make use at the same time both of faith and reason, to be at once both devout and humane.

Then, pressing the hand of Clara, which she constantly held in her's, and looking at her with the most affecting tenderness, All these blessings, said she, I have enjoyed in common with others; but this one—this, heaven reserved for me alone; I am a woman, and yet have known a true friend. Heaven gave us birth at the same time; it gave us a similarity of inclinations, which has subsisted to this hour: it formed our hearts one for the other; it united us in the cradle; I have been blessed with her friendship during my life, and her kind hand will close my eyes in death. Find another example like this in the world, and I have no longer any thing to boast.

boast. What prudent advice hath she not given me? from what perils hath she not saved me? under what afflictions hath she not comforted me? what should I indeed have been without her? what should I not have been, had I listened more attentively to her counsel. Clara, instead of replying, leaned her head on the breast of her friend, and would have stifled her sighs by her tears; but it was impossible. Julia embraced her with the most cordial affection, and for a long time a scene of tearless silence succeeded.

When they recovered themselves, Julia continued her discourse. These blessings, said she, were mixed with their inconveniences; such is the lot of humanity! My heart was made for love; difficult as to personal merit, but indifferent to that of opinion, it was morally impossible that my father's prejudices should ever agree with my inclinations. My heart required a lover of its own peculiar choice. Such a one offered himself: I made choice of him; or rather heaven so directed my choice, that though a slave to passion, I should not be abandoned to the horrors of my guilt, and that the love of virtue should still keep possession of my heart, even after I was criminal. He made use of the specious insinuating language of virtue, by which a thousand base men daily seduce our sex; but perhaps he only of all mankind was sincere. Did I then know his heart? ah! no. I then knew no more of him than his professions, and yet I was seduced. I did that through despair which others have done through wantonness; I even threw myself, as my father reproached me, into his arms; and yet he loved and re-
spected

spected me: by that respect alone I began to know him truly. Every man capable of such behaviour must have a noble soul. Then, I might safely have trusted him; but I had done that before, and afterwards ventured to trust in my own strength, and so was deceived.

She then went on to lavish encomiums on the merit of this unhappy lover: I will not say she did him more than justice, but the pleasure she took in it was very obvious. She even praised him at her own expence; and by endeavouring to be just to him, was unjust to herself. She went even so far as to maintain, that he held adultery in greater horror than she did; forgetting that he himself had disproved any such suggestion.

All the other incidents of her life were related in the same spirit. The behaviour of Lord B——, her husband, her children, your return, our friendship, every thing was set in the most favourable light. She recapitulated even her misfortunes with pleasure, as accidents which had prevented greater misfortunes. She lost her mother at a time when that loss was peculiarly felt; but if heaven had been pleased to spare her, a disturbance, fatal to the peace of her family, might have been the consequence. The assistance of her mother, feeble as it was, would have been sufficient to strengthen her resolution to resist the will of her father; whence family-discord and scandal would have arisen, perhaps some disaster or dishonour, and perhaps still worse if her brother had lived. She had married a man against her own inclination, whom she did not love; and yet she maintained, that she could not have been so happy with

any other man, not even with the object of her passion. The death of Mr Orbe had deprived her of a friend in the husband, but had restored to her a more amiable one in the wife. She even went so far as to include her uneasiness, her pains, in the number of blessings, as they had served to prevent her heart from being hardened against the sufferings of others. It is unknown, said she, the delight of bemoaning our own misfortunes or those of others. A susceptible mind finds a contentment in itself, independant of fortune. How deeply have I sighed! how bitterly have I wept! and yet, were I to pass my life again, the evil I have committed would be all that I would wish retrenched; that which I have suffered would be again agreeable. These, St Preux, were her own words; when you have read her letter, they will perhaps seem more intelligible.

Thus, continued she, you see to what felicity I was arrived. I enjoyed a considerable share of happiness, and had still more in view. The increasing prosperity of my family, the virtuous education of my children, all that I held dear in the world, assembled, or ready to be assembled around me. The time present and the future equally flattering, enjoyment and hope united to complete my happiness. Thus raised to the pinnacle of earthly bliss, I could not but descend; as it came before it was expected, it would have taken its flight while I was delighted in the thoughts of its duration. What could Providence have done to have sustained me on the summit of felicity? a permanent situation is not the lot of mankind; no, when we have acquired

quired every thing, we must lose something, though it were from no other cause than that the pleasure of enjoyment diminishes by possession. My father is already in the decline of life; my children of an age when life is very uncertain; how many losses might not hereafter afflict me, without my having it in my power to repair, or console myself under, one! A mother's affection constantly increases, whilst the tenderness of her offspring diminishes in proportion as they are absent, or reside at a distance from her. Mine, as they grow up, would be taken from me: they would live in the great world, and might neglect me. You intend to send one of them to Russia; how many tears would not his departure and absence cost me! all by degrees would be detached from me, and I should have nothing to supply their loss. How often should I find myself in the situation in which I now am going to leave you! and after all, I must still die; die perhaps the last of you all, alone and forsaken! The longer one lives, the more desirous we are of living, even when our enjoyments are at an end: hence I might survive till life became a burden, and yet should fear to die; it is the ordinary consequence of old age. Instead of that, my last moments are now agreeable; and I have strength to resign myself to death, if death it may be called to leave behind us what we love. No, my friends, my children, think not that I shall leave you; I will remain with you; in leaving you thus united, my heart, my soul, will still reside among you; you will see me continually among you; you will perceive me perpetually near you—The time

will also come when we shall be united again; nor shall the virtuous Wolmar himself escape me. My return to God speaks peace to my soul, and sweetens the bitter moment that approaches; it promises me for you also the same felicity. I have been happy, I am still happy, and am going to be so for ever; my happiness is determined, beyond the power of fortune, to all eternity.

Just then the minister entered. Julia was truly the object of his respect and esteem; nobody knowing better than he the liveliness and sincerity of her belief. He was but too much affected with the conversation he had held with her the day before, and above all with the serenity and fortitude he had observed in her. He had often seen persons die with ostentation, but never with such calmness. Perhaps also to the interest he took in her situation was added a little curiosity to see whether such her uncommon serenity would continue to the last.

Julia had no occasion to change the subject of discourse to render it more agreeable to the character of our visitor. As her conversation when in health was never on frivolous topics, so now she continued on her sick-bed, to talk over with the same tranquillity such subjects as she thought most interesting to herself and her friends; speaking indifferently on matters in themselves by no means indifferent.

Thus, following the chain of her ideas relative to her notions of remaining with her friends; the discourse turned on the situation of the soul separated from the body: when she took occasion to admire the simplicity of such persons,

persons, who promised on their death-beds to come back to their friends, and bring them news of the other world. This, continued she, is just as reasonable, as the stories of ghosts and apparitions, that are said to commit a thousand disorders, and torment credulous good women; as if departed spirits had lungs to scold and hands to fight with. How is it possible for a pure spirit to act upon a soul inclosed in a body, and which, by virtue of its union with such body, can perceive nothing but by means of the corporeal organs? This is not to be conceived. I must confess, however, I see nothing absurd in supposing that the soul, when delivered from the body, should return, wander about, or perhaps reside near the persons of such as were dear to it in life: not indeed to inform them of its existence; it has no means of communicating such information; neither can it act on us, or perceive what we act, for want of the organs of sense necessary to that end; but methinks it might become acquainted with our thoughts and perceptions, by an immediate communication similar to that by which the Deity is privy to all our thoughts, and by which we reciprocally read the thoughts of each other, in coming face to face: for, added she, turning to the minister, of what use can the senses be when there is nothing for them to do? The Supreme Being is neither seen nor understood; he only makes himself felt; he speaks neither to the eyes nor the ears, but only to the heart.

I understood, by the answer of the pastor, and from some signs which passed between them, that the resurrection of the body had been one

of the points on which they had formerly disputed. I perceived also that I now began to give more attention to the articles of Julia's religion, where her faith seemed to approach the bounds of reason.

She seemed to take so much pleasure in these notions, that, had she not been pre-determined to abide by her former opinions, it had been cruelty to endeavour to invalidate one that seemed so agreeable to her in her present condition. What an additional pleasure, said she, have I not an hundred times taken, in doing a good action, in the imagination that my good mother was present, and that she knew the heart and approved the intentions of her daughter ! there is something so comfortable in the thoughts of living under the eyes of those who were dear to us, that, with respect to ourselves, they can hardly be said to be deceased. You may judge whether Clara's hand was not frequently pressed during this discourse.

The minister had replied hitherto with a good deal of complacency and moderation ; he took care, however, not to forget his profession for a moment, but opposed her sentiments on the business of another life. He told her the immensity, glory, and other attributes of God, would be the only objects which the souls of the blessed would be employed in contemplating : that such sublime contemplation would efface every other idea ; that we should see nothing, that we should remember nothing, even in heaven ; but that the thoughts of every thing earthly would be swallowed up in the ravishing prospect.

That may well be, returned Julia ; there is
such

such an immense distance between the lowness of our thoughts and the divine essence, that we cannot judge what effect it may have on us when we are in a situation to contemplate its beauty. But, as I have hitherto been able to reason only from my ideas, I must confess that I leave some persons so dear to me, that it would grieve me much to think I should never remember them more. One part of my happiness, say I, will consist in the testimony of a good conscience; I shall certainly remember then how I have acted on earth: if I remember this, I cannot forget those persons who were dear to me; who must be still so: to see * them no more, then, will be a pain to me; and pain enters not into the mansions of the blessed. But if, after all, I am mistaken, says she, smiling, a mistake for a day or two will be soon at an end. I shall know, Sir, in a short time, more on this subject than even yourself. In the mean time, this I am well assured of, that so long as I remember that I have lived on earth, so long shall I esteem those I loved there, among whom my worthy pastor will not have the lowest place.

In this manner passed the conversation all that day, during which Julia appeared to have more ease, more hope and assurance than ever, seeming, in the opinion of the minister, to enjoy a foretaste of that happiness she was going to par-

* It is almost needless to observe, that by the word *see* is here meant purely an act of the intellect, such as that whereby we are said to see the Deity, and the Deity to see us. We cannot *perceive* the immediate communication of spirits; but we can *conceive* it very well; and better, in my opinion, than the communication of motion between bodies.

partake among the blessed. Never did she appear more tender, more amiable, in a word, more herself, than at this time : always sensible, sentimental, possessing the fortitude of the philosopher and the mildness of a Christian. Nothing of affectation, nothing assuming or sententious, escaped her; her expression always dictated by her sentiments, with the greatest simplicity of heart. If sometimes she stifled the complaints which her sufferings might have drawn from her, it was not through affectation of a stoical intrepidity, but to prevent those who were about her from being afflicted; and when the pangs of approaching death triumphed over her strength, she strove not to hide her sufferings, but permitted us to comfort her, and, when she recovered from them a little, comforted us in her turn. In the intervals of her pain, she was chearful, but her chearfulness was extremely affecting; a smile sitting frequently on her lips, while the eye ran over with tears. To what purpose is that terror which permits us not to enjoy what we are going speedily to lose? Julia was even more pleasing, more amiable than when in health; and the last day of her life was the most glorious of all.

Towards the evening she had another fit, which, though not so severe as that in the morning, would not permit us to leave the children long with her. She remarked, however, that Harriot looked changed; and though we accounted for it, by saying she wept much and eat little, she said, No, her illness was in the blood.

Finding herself better, she would have us sup
in

in her own chamber; the doctor being still with her. Fanny also, whom we always used to send for when we chose she should dine or sup at our table, came up unsent for; which Julia perceiving, she smiled and said, Yes, child, come, you shall sup with me to-night; you may have your husband longer than you will have your mistress. Then turning to me, she said, I shall have no need to recommend Claude Anet to your protection. No, replied I, whosoever you have honoured with your benevolence needs no other recommendation to me.

Julia, finding she could bear the light, had the table brought near the bed; and what is hardly to be conceived of one in her situation, she had an appetite. The physician, who saw no danger in gratifying her, offered her a bit of chicken; which she refused, but desired a bit of fish, which she eat with a little bread, and said it was very good. While she was eating, you should have seen the looks of Mrs Orbe; you should have seen, I say, for it is impossible to describe them. What she eat was so far from doing her harm, that she seemed the better for it during the remainder of the repast. She was even in such good humour as to take upon her to complain that we had been so long without wine. Bring, says she, a bottle of Spanish wine for these gentlemen. By the looks of the physician, she saw he expected to taste some genuine Spanish wine; and casting her eyes at Clara, smiled at the conceit. In the mean time, Clara, without giving attention to that circumstance, looked with extreme concern, sometimes at Julia, and then on Fanny, of whom her eyes
seemed

seemed to say, or ask something which I could not understand.

The wine did not come so soon as was expected; the valet-de-chambre, who was entrusted with the key of the cellar, having taken it away through mistake. On inquiry, indeed, it was found that the provision intended for one day had lasted five; and that the key was gone without any body's perceiving the want of it, notwithstanding the family had sat up several nights. The physician was amazed; and for my part, at a loss whether I should attribute this forgetfulness to the concern or the sobriety of the servants, I was ashamed to make use of ordinary precautions with such domestics, and therefore ordered the door of the cellar to be broke open, and that for the future every one might drink at their discretion.

At length a bottle was brought us, and the wine proved excellent; when the patient having a mind to taste it, desired some mixed with water; on which the doctor gave her a glass, and ordered her to drink it unmixed. Clara and Fanny now cast their eyes more frequently at each other, but with looks timid and constrained, as if they were fearful of saying too much.

Her fasting, weakness, and ordinary way of living, made the wine have a great effect on Julia. She perceived it, and said she was intoxicated. After having deferred it so long, said she, it was hardly worth while to begin to make me tipsy now, for a drunken woman is a most odious sight. In fact, she began to prattle, sensibly however as usual, but with more vivacity than before. It was astonishing, never-

vertheless, that her colour was not heightened ; her eyes sparkled only with a fire moderated by the languor of her illness ; and, excepting her paleness, she looked to be in full health. Clara's emotion became now extremely visible. She cast a timid look alternately on Julia, on me, on Fanny, and, above all, on the physician ; these were all expressive of so many interrogatories which she was desirous but fearful to make. One would have thought every moment that she was going to speak, but that the fear of a disagreeable reply prevented her : indeed her disquietude appeared at length so great, that it seemed oppressive.

Fanny, encouraged by all these signs, and willing to relieve her, attempted to speak, but with a trembling voice, faltering out that her mistress seemed to have been in less pain to-day—that her last convulsion was not so strong as the preceding—that the evening seemed—and there she stopped. Clara, who trembled like a leaf while Fanny was speaking, now fixed her eyes on the physician, listening with all her attention, and hardly venturing to breathe, lest she should not perfectly understand what he was going to say.

A man must have been stupid not to have guessed the meaning of all this. Du Bosson got up, felt the pulse of the patient, and said, Here is neither intoxication nor fever ; the pulse promises well. Clara rose up in a moment, and, addressing the doctor with the utmost impatience, would have interrogated him more particularly, but her speech failed her. How, Sir ! said she—the pulse ! the fever ! she could say
no

no more; but her eyes sparkled with impatience, and not a muscle in her face but indicated the most disquieting curiosity.

The doctor, however, made no answer; but took up the patient's hand again, examined her eyes and her tongue, and having stood silent a while, said, I understand you, Madam; but it is impossible for me to say any thing positively at present; only this, that if the patient is in the same situation at this hour to-morrow morning, I will answer for her life. The words had scarce dropt from his lips, before Clara, rushing forward quick as lightning, overturned two chairs and almost the table to get at him, when she hung round his neck and kissed him a hundred times, sobbing and bathing his face with her tears. With the same impetuosity she took a ring of value from her finger, and put it forcibly on his, crying out, as well as she could, quite out of breath, O Sir! if you do but restore her to us, it is not one life only you will be so happy as to save.

Julia saw and heard this, which greatly affected her. Looking on her friend, therefore, she thus broke out in a sorrowful and moving tone: Cruel Clara! how you make me regret the loss of life! are you resolved to make me die in despair? must you be a second time prepared? These few words were like a clap of thunder; they immediately extinguished her transports, but could not quite stifle her rekindled hopes.

In an instant, the doctor's reply to Mrs Orbe was known throughout the house, and the honest domestics already conceited their mistress half restored

restored. They unanimously resolved, therefore, to make the doctor a present on her recovery, to which each contributed three months wages, and the money was immediately put into the hands of Fanny; some borrowing of the others what they wanted to make up their quota of the sum. This agreement was made with so much eagerness and haste, that Julia heard in her bed the noise of their acclamations. Think, my friend, what an effect this must have had on the heart of a woman who felt herself dying. She made a sign to me to come near, and whispered in my ear; See how they make me drink to the very bottom that bitter yet sweet cup of sensibility!

When it was time to retire, Mrs Orbe, who still partook of her cousin's bed, called her woman, to sit up that night to relieve Fanny: the latter however objected to that proposal, and seemingly with greater earnestness than she would have done had not her husband been come. Mrs Orbe persisted notwithstanding in her design, and both of them passed the night together in the closet. I sat up in the next chamber; but the hopes which the domestics entertained, had so animated their zeal, that neither persuasions nor threats could prevail on one of them to go to bed that night. Thus the whole house sat up all night under so much impatience, that there was not one of the family who would not have gladly given a whole year of his life to have had it nine o'clock in the morning.

I frequently heard them walking in her chamber, during the night, which did not disturb

me; but toward the morning, when things seemed more quiet and still, I was alarmed at a low, indistinct noise that seemed to come from Julia's room. I listened, and thought I could now distinguish the groans of a person in extremity. I ran into the room, threw open the curtain, and there——O St Preux! there I saw them both, those amiable friends, motionless, locked in each other's embrace, the one fainted away and the other expiring. I cried out, and hastened to prevent or receive her last sigh; but it was too late; Julia was no more.

I can give you no account of what passed for some hours afterwards; being ignorant of what befel myself during that time. As soon as I was a little recovered from my first surprise, I inquired after Mrs Orbe; and learned that the servants were obliged to carry her into her own chamber, where at last they were forced to confine her to prevent her returning into that of Julia; which she had several times done, throwing herself on the body, embracing, chafing, and kissing it in a kind of phrenzy, and exclaiming aloud in a thousand passionate expressions of fruitless despair.

On entering her apartment, I found her absolutely frantic, neither seeing nor minding any thing, knowing nobody, but running about the room, and wringing her hands, sometimes muttering in a hollow voice some extravagant words, and at others sending forth such terrible shrieks as to make one shudder with horror. On the feet of the bed sat her woman, frightened out of her wits, not daring to breathe or stir, but seeking to hide herself and trembling every limb.

In

In fact, the convulsions, which at this time agitated the unhappy Clara, had something in them most terrifying. I made a sign that her woman should retire; fearing lest a single word of consolation, untimely offered, might have put her into an actual fury.

I did not attempt therefore to speak to her; as she could neither have listened to or understood me; but observing, after some time, that her strength was quite exhausted with fatigue, I placed her on a settee; then sitting down by her and holding her hands, I ordered the children to be brought in and called them round her. Unhappily the first she took notice of was him that was the innocent cause of her friend's death. The sight of him, I could see, made her tremble; her countenance changed, she turned away her looks from him in a kind of horror, and struggled to get her hands loose to push him from her. I called him then to me. Unfortunate boy! said I; for having been too dear to the one, you are become hateful to the other: it is plain their hearts were not in every thing alike. She was extremely angry at what I said, and retorted it severely: it had nevertheless its effect in the impression it made on her. For she immediately took the child up in her arms, and attempted to kiss him, but could not, and set him down again immediately. She did not even look upon him with the same pleasure as on the other, and I am very glad it is not this boy which is intended for her daughter.

Ye susceptible minds! what would you have done in my situation? You would have acted like Mrs Orbe.

M m 2

children,

children, and of Clara, and given the necessary orders about the funeral, it was necessary for me to take my horse, and be the sorrowful messenger of the heavy tidings to an unhappy father. I found him still in pain from his hurt, as well as greatly uneasy and troubled about the accident which had befallen his daughter. I left him overwhelmed with sorrow: with the sorrow of the aged, which breaks not out into external appearances, which excites neither transport nor exclamation, but preys inwardly and fatally on the heart. That he will never overcome his grief I am certain, and I can plainly foresee the last stroke that is wanting to complete the misfortune of his friend. The next day I made all possible haste, in order to be at home early, and pay the last honours to the worthiest of women; but all was not yet over. She must be made to revive, to afflict me with the loss of her a second time.

As I drew near my house, I saw one of my people come running out to meet me, who cried out from as far as he could be heard; Sir, Sir, make haste, make haste, my mistress is not dead. I could not comprehend what he meant; but made all the haste I could, and found the court-yard full of people, crying for joy and calling out aloud for blessings on Mrs Wolmar. I asked the reason of all this; every one was transported with joy, but nobody could give me a reasonable answer; for as to my own people, their heads were absolutely turned. I made the best of my way therefore to Julia's apartment, where I found more than twenty persons on their knees round the bed, with their eyes attentively

tentively fixed on the corpse, which, to my great surprise, I saw dressed out and lying on the bed. My heart fluttered, and I examined into her situation: but alas! she was dead and cold! This moment of false hope, so soon and so cruelly extinguished, was the most afflicting moment of my whole life. I am not apt to be cholerick; but I found myself on this occasion extremely angry, and resolved to come at the bottom of this extravagant scene. But all was so disguised, so altered, so changed, that I had the greatest difficulty in the world to come at the truth. At length, however, I unravelled the mystery.

My father-in-law, being alarmed at the accident he had heard, and thinking he could spare his valet-de-chamber, had sent him over before my arrival to learn the situation of his daughter. This old servant, being fatigued with riding on horseback, had taken a boat, and, crossing the lake in the night, arrived at Clarens the very morning of the day in which I returned. On his arrival he saw the universal consternation the house was in; and, learning the cause, went sobbing up to Julia's apartment; where, throwing himself on his knees, by the bed-side, he weeped and contemplated the features of his departed mistress. Then giving vent to his sorrows, he cried out, Ah! my good mistress! ah! why did it not please God to take me instead of you! me, that am old, that have no connections, that can be of no more service on the face of the earth! but to take you in the flower of youth, the pride of your family, the blessing of your house, the hope

of the unfortunate, alas ! was I present at your birth, thus to behold you dead !—

In the midst of these and such like exclamations, which flowed from the goodness and sincerity of his heart, the weak old man, who kept his eyes still fixed on the corpse, imagined he saw it move : having once taken this into his head, he imagined farther that Julia turned her eyes, looked at him, and made a sign to him with her head. Upon this he rose up in great transport, and ran up and down the house, crying out his mistress was not dead, that she knew him, and that he was sure she was living and would recover. This was sufficient to call every body together ; the servants, the neighbours, and the poor, who before made the air resound with their lamentations, now all as loudly cried out in transport, She is not dead ! she lives ! she lives ! The noise spread and increased ; the common people, all fond of the marvellous, readily propagated the news : every one easily believed what he wished might be true, and sought to give others pleasure by countenancing the general credulity. So that, in a short time, the deceased was reported not only to have made a motion with her head, but to have walked about, to have conversed, &c. more than twenty witnesses having had ocular proofs of circumstances that never happened or existed.

No sooner were they possessed with the notion of her being alive, but a thousand efforts were made to restore her ; they pressed in crowds about her bed, spoke to her, threw spirits in her face, felt for her pulse, and did every thing their foolish apprehensions suggested to recover her ;

her; till her women, justly offended at seeing the body of their mistress surrounded by a number of men, got every body turned out of the room, and soon convinced themselves how egregiously they had been deceived. Incapable, however, of resolving to put an end to so agreeable an error, or perhaps still hoping for some miraculous event, they cloathed the body with care, and though her wardrobe was left to them, they did not spare the richest apparel. After which laying her out on the bed, and leaving the curtains open, they returned to their tears amidst the public rejoicings of the multitude.

I arrived in the height of this phrenzy, but when I became acquainted with the cause, found it impossible to bring the crowd to reason; and that if I had shut up my doors, and had ordered the immediate burial of the corpse, it might have occasioned some disturbance; or that I should have passed, at least, for a parricide of a husband, who had buried his wife alive, and should have been held in detestation by the whole country. I resolved therefore to defer the funeral. After six and thirty hours however, I found, by the extreme heat of the weather, the corpse began to change, and, though the face preserved its features and sweetness, there seemed even there some signs of alteration. I mentioned it to Mrs Orbe, who sat in a continued stupor, at the head of the bed. Not that she was so happy as to be the dupe of so gross a delusion; but she pretended to be so, that she might continue in the chamber, and indulge her sorrows.

She

She understood my design, and silently withdrew. In a moment after, however, she returned, bringing in her hand that vail of gold tissue embroidered with pearls, which you brought her from the Indies *: when, coming up to the bed, she kissed the vail, and spreading it over the face of her deceased friend, she cried out with a shrill voice, " Accursed be that sacrilegious hand which shall presume to lift up this vail! accursed be that impious eye which shall dare to look on this disfigured face !" This action and imprecation had such an effect on the spectators, that, as if by a sudden inspiration, it was repeated by one and all from every quarter. Such an impression indeed did it make on our servants and the people in general, that the deceased being put into the coffin, dressed as she was, and with the greatest caution, was carried away and buried in the same attire, without any person daring to touch the vail that covered her face.

Those are certainly the most unhappy, who, beside the supporting their own sorrows, are under the necessity of consoling others. Yet this is my task with my father-in-law, with Mrs Orbe, with friends, with relations, with my neighbours, and with my own household. I could yet support it well enough with all but my

* It is clearly to be seen that the dream of St Preux, of which Mrs Orbe's imagination was constantly full, suggested the expedient of the vail. I conceive also, that if we examine into matters of this kind strictly, we shall find the same relation between many predictions and their accomplishment. Events are not always predicted because they are to happen; but they happen because they were predicted.

my old friend and Mrs Orbe : but you must be a witness to the affliction of the latter to judge how much it adds to mine. So far from taking my endeavours to comfort her in good part, she even reproaches me for them ; my solicitude offends her, and the coldness of my affliction but aggravates her ; she would have my grief be as bitter and extravagant as her's ; her barbarous affliction would gladly see the whole world in despair. Every thing she says, every thing she does, looks like madness ; I am obliged therefore to put up with every thing, and am resolved not to be offended. In serving her who was beloved by Julia, I conceive I do a greater honour to her memory than by fruitless tears and lamentations.

You will be able to judge, from one instance, of the rest of her behaviour. I thought I had gained my point, by engaging her to take care of herself, in order to be able to discharge those duties which her dying friend had imposed on her. Reduced very low by convulsions, abstinence, and want of rest, she seemed at length resolved to attempt her usual method of living, and to come to table in the dining-room. The first time, however, I ordered the children to dine in the nursery, being unwilling to run the hazard of this essay, in their presence : violent passions of every kind, being one of the most dangerous objects that can be shewn to children. For the passions, when excessive, have always something puerile and diverting to young minds, by which they are seduced to admire what they ought to dread.

On entering the dining-room, she cast her
eye

eye on the table, and saw covers laid for two persons only; at which she flung herself into the first chair that stood next her, refusing to come to table. I imagined I knew the reason, and ordered a third plate to be set on the table, at the place where her cousin used generally to sit. She then permitted me to lead her to her seat without reluctance, placing herself with great caution, and disposing her gown as if she was afraid to incommode the empty chair. On putting the first spoonful of soup to her mouth, however, she withdrew it, and asked with a peevish air, what business that plate had there when nobody made use of it? I answered, she was in the right, and had it taken away. She then strove to eat, but could get nothing down; by degrees her stomach swelled, her breath grew short, and all at once she started up and returned to her own chamber, without saying a word, or hearing any thing that I said to her, obstinately refusing every thing but tea all that day.

The next day I had the same task to begin again. I now conceived the best way to bring her to reason was to humour her, and to endeavour to soften her despair by more tender sentiments. You know how much her daughter resembles Mrs Wolmar; that she took a pleasure in heightening that resemblance, by dressing her in the same manner, having brought several cloaths for her from Geneva, in which she used to dress her like Julia. I ordered Harriot therefore to be dressed, as much in imitation of Julia as possible; and, after having given her her lesson, placed her at table where
 Julia

Julia used to sit; three covers being laid as the day before.

Clara immediately comprehended my design, and was affected, giving me a tender and obliging look. This was the first time she seemed sensible of my assiduity, and I promised myself success from the expedient. Harriot, proud to represent her little mamma, played her part extremely well; so well indeed, that I observed the servants in-waiting shed tears. She nevertheless always gave the name of mamma to her mother, and addressed her with proper respect. At length, encouraged by success and my approbation, she ventured to put her hand to the soup-spoon, and cried, *Clara, my dear, do you chuse any of this!* The gesture, tone, and manner, in which she spoke this, were so exactly like those of Julia, that it made her mother tremble. A moment after, however, she burst into a fit of laughter, and offering her plate, replied, Yes, child, give me a little, you are a charming creature. She then began to eat with an eagerness that surprised me. Looking at her with some attention, I saw something wild in her eyes, and a greater impatience in her action and manner than usual. I prevented her therefore from eating any more, and it was well I did so; for, an hour after she was taken extremely ill with a violent surfeit, which, had she continued to eat more, might have been fatal. From this time I resolved to try no more projects of this kind, as they might affect her imagination too much. Sorrow is more easily cured than madness; I thought it better therefore to let her suffer

420 J U L I A; or,
suffer under the one a little longer, than run
the hazard of driving her into the other.

Such is the situation, my friend, in which we
are at present. Since the baron's return, in-
deed, Clara goes up every morning to his apart-
ment, whether I am at home or abroad; where
they generally pass an hour or two together.
She begins also to take a little more notice of
the children. One of them has been sick; this
accident has made her sensible that she has still
something to lose, and has animated her zeal to
the discharge of her duty. But, with all this,
she is not yet sufficiently sorrowful; her tears
have not yet begun to flow; we wait for you
to draw them forth, for you to dry them up a-
gain. You cannot but understand me. Think
of the last advice of Julia; it was indeed first
suggested by me, and I now think it more than
ever prudent and useful. Come and be re-united
to all that remains of Julia. Her father, her
friend, her husband, her children, all expect
you, all desire your company, as being necessary
to us all.

In a word, without farther explanations, come,
partake and cure us of our sorrows; I shall per-
haps be more obliged to you than to any other
man on earth.

L E T T E R CLXII.

From JULIA.

This letter was inclosed in the preceding.

NOW are our projects at an end. Circum-
stan-

stances, my good friend, are changed: let us bear the change without murmuring; it is the will of Infinite Wisdom. We pleased ourselves with the thoughts of being re-united; such a re-union was not good for us. The goodness of Providence has prevented it, doubtless to prevent our misery.

Long have I indulged the salutary delusion, that my passion was extinguished; the delusion is now vanished, when it can be no longer useful. You imagined me cured of my love; I thought so too. Let us thank heaven that the deception hath lasted as long as it could be of service to us. In vain, alas! I endeavoured to stifle that passion which inspired me with life; it was impossible, it was interwoven with my heart-strings. It now expands itself, when it is no longer to be dreaded; it supports me now my strength fails me; it cheers my soul even in death. O my friend! I can now make this confession without fear or shame; this involuntary sentiment has been of no prejudice to my virtue, it has never sullied my innocence; I have done my duty in all things that were in my power. If my heart was yours, it was my punishment and not my crime. My virtue is unblemished, and my love has left behind it no remorse.

I glory in my past life; but who could have answered for my future years? Perhaps, were I to live another day, I should be culpable! what then might I not have been during whole years spent in your company? What dangers have I not run without knowing it? and to how much greater was I going to be exposed? Every trial

has indeed been made; but trials may be too often repeated. Have I not lived long enough to be happy and virtuous? In taking me hence, heaven deprives me of nothing which I ought to regret. I go, my friend, at a most favourable moment; satisfied with you and myself, I depart in peace.

I foresee, I feel your affliction; I know too well you will be left to mourn; the thoughts of your sorrow cause my greatest uneasiness. But reflect on the consolation I leave with you. The obligations left you to discharge on the part of her who was so dear to you, ought to make it your duty to take care of yourself for her sake. You are left in charge with her better half. You will lose no more of Julia than you have long been deprived of. Her better part remains with you. Come and join her family, in the midst of whom Julia's heart will still be found. Let every one that was dear to her unite to give her a new being. Your business, your pleasures, your friendship, shall be her own work. The bonds of our union shall give her new life, nor will she totally expire but with the last of her friends.

Think there remains for you another Julia, and forget not what you owe her. You are both going to lose the half of yourselves; unite therefore to preserve the other. The only method that remains for you to survive me, is to supply my place in my family and with my children. Oh that I could but invent still stronger bonds to unite those who are so dear to me! but reflect how much you are indebted to each other, and let that reflection strengthen your mutual
at-

attachment. Your former objections, against entering into such an engagement, will now become arguments for it. How can either of you ever speak of me without melting into tenderness? No, Julia and Clara shall for the future be so united together in your thoughts, that it shall not be in the power of your heart to separate them. Her's will share in every thing yours has felt for her friend; she will become both the confident and object of your passion. You will be happy in the enjoyment of that Julia who survives, without being unfaithful to her you shall have lost; and after so many disappointments and misfortunes, shall, before the age of life and love is past, burn with a lawful flame, and possess the happiness of an innocent passion.

It is by this chaste union that you will be at liberty to employ your thoughts entirely on the discharge of those duties which I have recommended; after which you need never be at a loss to account for the good you have done on earth. You know there exists also a man worthy of an honour, to which he durst not aspire: you know him to have been your deliverer, as well as the husband of your friend. Left alone, without connections in this life, without expectations from futurity, without joy, without comfort, without hope, he will soon be the most unfortunate of men. You owe to him the same pains he has taken with you, and you know the way to render them successful. Remember the instructions of my former letter. Pass your days with him. Let no one that loved me forsake him. As he restored your taste for virtue,

so shew him the object, and the value of it. Be you truly a Christian, to engage him to be one too; the success of the attempt is more probable than perhaps you imagine. He has done his duty, I will do mine, and you must hereafter do yours. God is just, and my confidence in him will not deceive me.

I have but a word or two more to say, concerning my children. I know the trouble their education will cost you; but at the same time I know you will not repine. In the most fatiguing moments of such employment, reflect that they are the children of Julia, and every thing will be easy. Mr Wolmar will put into your hands the remarks I have made on your essay, and on the character of my two sons. They are however unfinished; and I leave them to you, not as rules for your conduct, but submit them as hints to your judgment. Strive not to make my children scholars, but benevolent and honest men. Speak to them sometimes of their mother—you know how dear they were to her—tell Mercellin I die willingly as I saved his life. Tell his brother it was for him I could have wished to live. Tell their—but I find myself fatigued; I must put an end to this letter. In leaving my children with you, I part with you with less regret: for in them I still continue with you.

Farewell, farewell, my dear friend! My life ends, alas! as it begun. Perhaps I have said too much at a time when the heart disguises nothing—ah! why should I be afraid to express all I feel? It is no longer I that speak; I am already in the arms of death. Before you read
this

this letter, the worms will be preying on the features of your friend, and will take possession of a heart where your image will be found no more. But can my soul exist without you? without you what happiness can I enjoy? No, we will not part—I go but to expect you. That virtue, which separated us on earth, will unite us for ever in the mansions of the blessed. I die in that peaceful hope; too happy to purchase, at the expence of my life, the privilege of loving you without a crime, and of telling you so once more.

L E T T E R CLXIII.

From Mrs ORBE.

I AM glad to hear that you begin to be so well recovered, as to give us hopes of seeing you soon here. You must, my friend, endeavour to get the better of your weakness; and try to pass the mountains before the winter prevents you. The air of this country, will agree with you; you will see here nothing but sorrow; and perhaps our common affliction will be the means of soothing your's. Mine stands greatly in need of your assistance; for I can neither weep, nor speak, nor make myself understood. Mr Wolmar indeed, understands me, but he makes me no answer. The affliction of an unfortunate father also is buried within himself; nor can any thing be conceived more cruelly tormenting: he neither hears, sees, nor understands any thing. Age has no vent for its griefs. My children af-

fect me without knowing how to be affected themselves. I am solitary in the midst of company ; a mournful silence prevails around me ; and in the stupidity of my affliction, I speak to nobody, having but just life enough in me to feel the horrors of death. O come, you who partake of my loss, come and partake of my griefs. Come, cherish my heart with your sorrow, refresh it with your tears. This is the only consolation I can hope for ; the only pleasure I can taste.

But before you arrive, and inform me of your intentions relative to a project which I know has been mentioned to you, it is proper I should inform you first of mine. I am frank and ingenuous, and therefore will dissemble nothing. That I have loved you, I confess ; nay, perhaps I love you still, and shall always do so : but this I know not, nor desire to know. I am not ignorant that it is suspected, which I do not concern myself about. But what I have to say, and what you ought to observe, is this : That a man who was beloved by Julia, and could resolve to marry another woman, would, in my opinion, be so base and unworthy a creature, that I should think it a dishonour to call such a one my friend ; and with respect to myself, I protest to you, that the man, whoever he be, that shall presume to talk of love hereafter to me, shall never in his life have a second opportunity.

Regard then only the employment that awaits you, the duties imposed on you, and remember her to whom you engaged to discharge them. Her children are growing up apace, her father is insensibly wasting, her husband is in continual

nual agitation of mind: in vain he strives to think her annihilated; his heart rebels against his reason. He speaks of her, he speaks to her, and sighs. Methinks I see already the repeated wishes of Julia half accomplished, and that you may put a finishing hand to so great a work. What a motive is here to induce both you and Lord B—— to repair hither. It is becoming his noble mind that our misfortunes have not made him change his resolution.

Come then, dear and respectable friends, come and rejoin all that is left of Julia. Let us assemble all that was dear to her: let her spirit animate us, let her heart unite ours; let us live continually under her eye. I take a delight in conceiving that her amiable and susceptible spirit will leave its peaceful mansions to re-visit ours; that it will take a pleasure in beholding its friend, imitate her virtues, in hearing herself honoured by their acknowledgments, in seeing them kiss her tomb, and sigh at the repetition of her name. No, she has not yet forsaken those haunts which she used to make so delightful. They are still full of her. I see her in every object, I perceive her at every step; every hour of the day I hear her well-known voice. It was here she lived, here died, and here repose her ashes——As I go, twice a-week, to the church, I cast my eye on the sad, revered spot——O beauty! is such thy last asylum?—sincerity! friendship! virtue! pleasure! innocence! all lie buried in her grave——I feel myself drawn as it were involuntarily to her tomb——I shudder as I approach——I dread to violate the hallowed earth——I imagine that I
feel

feel it shake and tremble under my feet—that I hear a plaintive voice call to me from the hollow tomb—Clara! where art thou? O my Clara! what detains thee from thy friend?—Alas! her grave hath yet but half her ashes—it is impatient for the remainder of its prey—yet a little while, and it shall be satisfied *!

* After having read over this collection, I think I have discovered the reason why the interest, which I imagine every well-disposed reader will take in them, though perhaps not very great, is yet agreeable: and this is, because, little as it may prove, it is not excited by villanies or crimes, nor mingled with the disagreeable sensations of hatred. I cannot conceive what pleasure it can give a writer, to imagine and describe the character of a villain; to put himself in his situation as often as he represents his actions, or to set them in the most flattering point of view. I cannot but greatly pity the authors of many of our tragedies, so full of wickedness and horror, who spend their lives in making characters act and speak, which one cannot see or hear without shuddering. For my part, I should think it a terrible misfortune to be condemned to such labour: those surely who do it for amusement, must be violently zealous for the entertainment of the public. I admire their genius and talents; but I thank God for having denied such talents to me.

4 AP 63

END of the THIRD VOLUME.

BOOKS published and sold by J. DICKSON,
front of the Exchange, *Edinburgh*.

- Henry's commentary on the Old and New Testaments, 6 vols. folio, 3*l.* 12*s.*
——— 6 vols. in boards, coarse, 2*l.* 2*s.*
Burkitt on the New Testament, folio, 1*l.*
Vertot's knights of Malta, 5 vols. 15*s.*
——— Revolutions of Rome, 3 vols. 9*s.*
——— Revolutions of Portugal, 2*s.* 6*d.*
Spectator, 8 vols. 15*s.*
Guardian, 2 vols. 4*s.*
Gil Blas, 4 vols. 8*s.*
Hervey's works, 5 vols. 15*s.*
——— meditations, 2*s.* 6*d.*
Voltaire's age of Lewis XV. 2 vols. 5*s.*
——— Peter the great, 2*s.* 6*d.*
——— Charles the XII. 2*s.* 6*d.*
——— Man of forty crowns, 2*s.*
——— Princess of Babylon 2*s.*
——— Ignorant philosopher, 2*s.*
——— Philosophical dictionary 3*s.* 6*d.*
Doddridge's paraphrase on the New Testament,
6 vols. 8vo. Price 1*l.* 16*s.*
Dr Blacklock's consolations, 8vo. 5*s.*
The theory of agreeable sensations, 12mo.
2*s.* 6*d.*
Thomson's works, complete, in 2 vols. 6*s.*
Shenstone's whole poetical works, 2*s.* 6*d.*
Sherlock's sermons, 4 vols. 12*s.*
——— 2 vols. coarse paper, 6*s.*
Pope's works, 8 vols. 16*s.*
Young's works, 4 vols. 8*s.*
Mrs Rowe's works, 4 vols. 8*s.*

—Let-

Books published and sold by J Dickson.

- _____ Letters, 2 s. 6 d.
Shakespeare's works, 8 vols. 1 l.
_____ 10 vols. 1 l.
_____ 12 vols. 1 l. 4 s.
Pardovan's collections concerning the discipline
and government of the church of Scotland,
8vo. 3 s. 6 d.
Hudibras, with Gray's notes, 3 vols. 7 s. 6 d.
The British theatre, or a collection of the best
English plays, 12 vols. 1 l. 16 s.
Rollin's ancient history, 10 vols. 1 l. 5 s.
Tillotson's sermons, 10 vols. 1 l. 5 s.
Fielding's works, 12 vols. 1 l. 10 s.
Montesquieu's works, 5 vols. 15 s.
Les oeuvres de Montesquieu, 6 tomes. 18 s.
Sermons par Massilon, 13 tomes. 1 l. 11 s. 6 d.

All handsomely bound in calf and lettered.

4 AP 63

BOOKS published and sold by C. ELLIOT,
Parliament-close, *Edinburgh*.

- I. A new edition, corrected, of An ANATOMICAL EXPOSITION of the STRUCTURE of the HUMAN BODY. By *James Benignus Winslow*, professor of anatomy, physic, and surgery, in the university of Paris; member of the Royal Academy of Sciences, and of the Royal Society at Berlin, &c. Translated from the original French, by G. Douglass, M. D. Illustrated with copper-plates. In two volumes Octavo. Price 10s. bound.
- II. INSTITUTIONES MEDICÆ, in usus annuæ exercitationis domesticos, digestæ ab *Hermanno Boerhaave*. Price 2s. 6d. sewed. Editio nova, correctâ et emendata.
- III. A SYNOPSIS of PRACTICAL MATHEMATICS, containing plain trigonometry; mensuration of heights, distances, surfaces and solids; surveying of land, gauging, navigation, and gunnery; with tables of the logarithms of numbers, and of sines and tangents. For the use of schools and men of business. By *Alexr. Ewing*, teacher of mathematics, in *Edinburgh*. Price 4s. bound.
- IV. INSTITUTES of ARITHMETIC. For the use of schools and academies. By the same author. Price 2s. bound.

Books published and sold by C. Elliot.

V. Walter Stewart of Pardovan's COLLECTIONS and OBSERVATIONS concerning the worship, discipline, and government of the church of Scotland; in four books. Unto which are added, The form of process in the judicatures of the church, with relation to scandals and censures;—and, The second book of discipline; or heads and conclusions of the policy of the kirk, approved by act of assembly 1581. A new edition, price 3s. 6d. bound.

4 AP 63

